





From the Library of  
Professor Benjamin Breckinridge Warfield  
Bequeathed by him to  
the Library of  
Princeton Theological Seminary

SCF #2363

Kuyper, Abraham, 1837-1920.

Calvinism : six Stone-lectures /





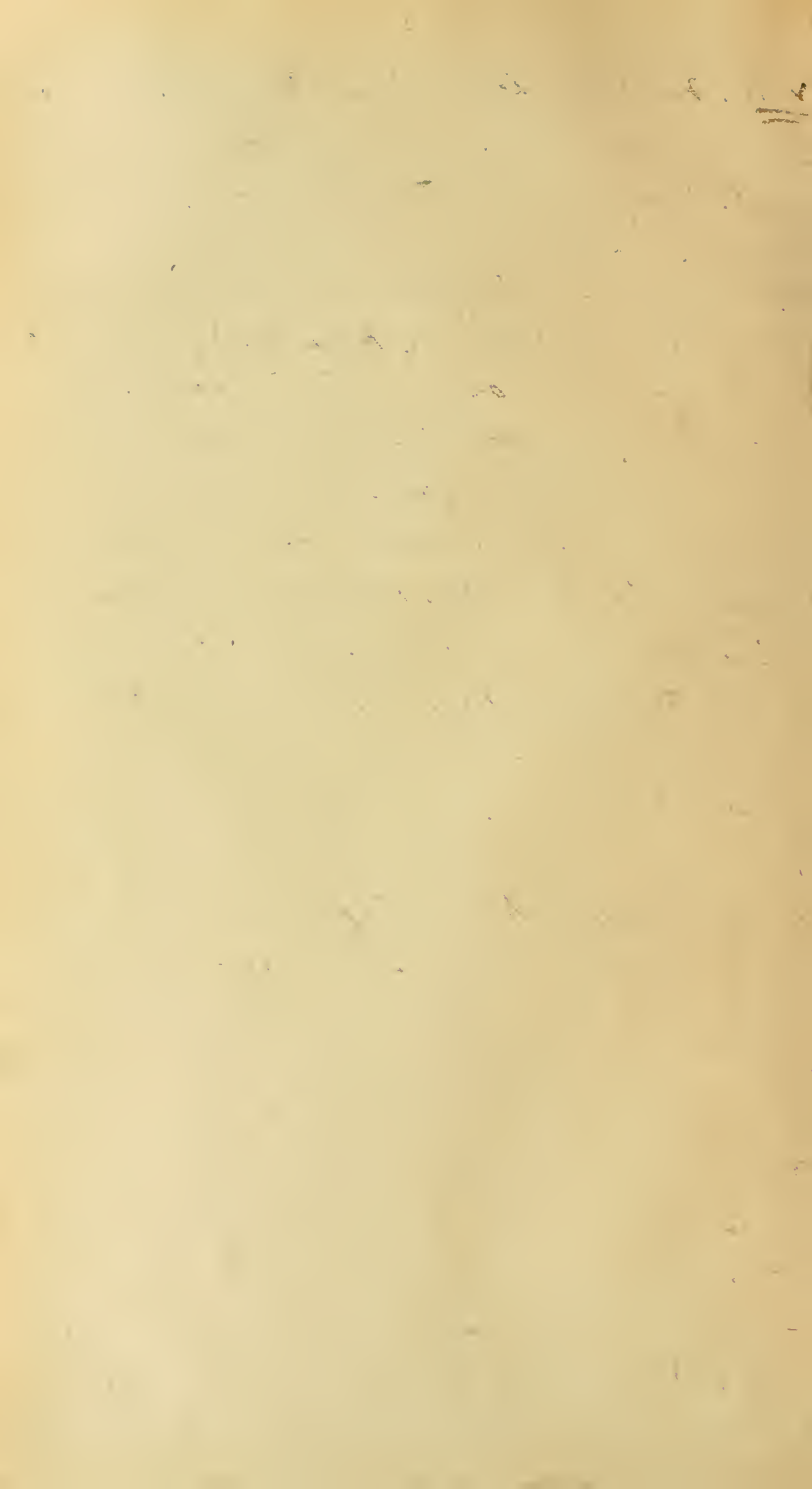






Note: The "Stone Lectures" in Princeton Theological Seminary were delivered in the autumn of 1898 by Dr. A. Kuyper, of the Free University of Amsterdam. About ten days before the lectures were to begin Dr. Kuyper sent his Dutch MS. & asked that it might be translated for his use. In the short time remaining it seemed necessary to engage more than one hand at the task & the following gentlemen kindly undertook to render the several lectures into English, viz:- The Rev. J. H. de Vries, pastor of the Second Presbyterian Church, Princeton, who translated Lectures I & V; the Rev. A. H. Huijzinga, D.D. of Fitchburg, N. Y., who translated Lecture II; the Rev. Rufus M. Huntington, D.D. of North Lomb, Michigan, who translated Lecture III; the Rev. Rufus M. Stebbins of Dubuque, Iowa, who translated Lecture IV; & the Rev. H. G. Vos, of Princeton, who translated Lecture VI. - The translated text are then set in type at Princeton & the printed sheets provided to Dr. Kuyper for use in the rostrum. Only a dozen copies were taken off the types - of which the following is one. Before the Lectures were issued to the public in English, (New York: Fleming H. Revell Co. [1899]), the text was much altered by Dr. Kuyper himself with a view to bettering the English, but with the



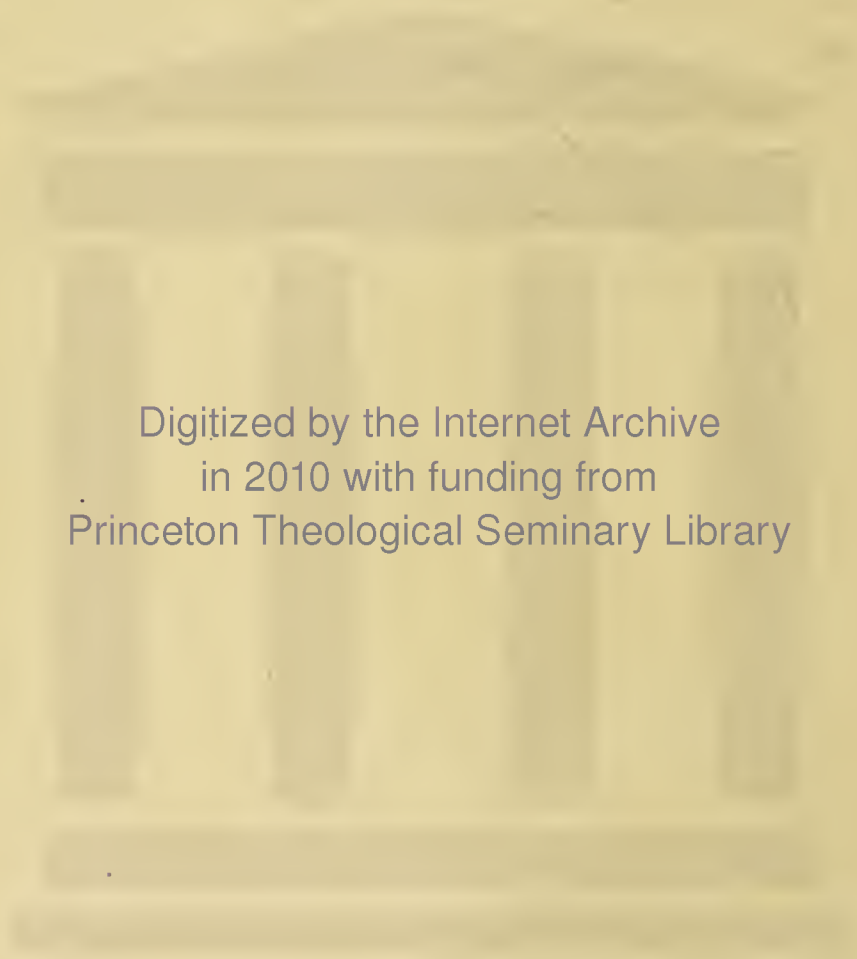




Effectually warning it away. The authentic text  
must even be the Dutch text, which appeared in  
Amsterdam in the known: of the two English  
texts, that issued by the Revell's has Dr. Key-  
ser's own imprimatur, but even the best text  
contained in this volume is better. — There shall  
be nothing & information for themselves though:  
other are worth — & it also as a souvenir  
& an interesting occasion, & as a means  
& commemorating the labor & love & the  
fortitude who permitted themselves to be  
harried through the task & translating the  
lectures for the use & the lecture on the  
subject. —

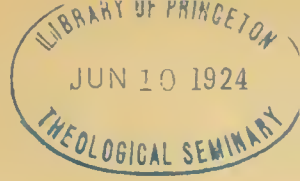
B. B. Warfield,





Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2010 with funding from  
Princeton Theological Seminary Library





Calvinism: O. S. Superintendant

Translated by Rev. J. H. L. Voss

## FIRST LECTURE.

### CALVINISM IN HISTORY.

A traveller from the old European Continent, disembarking on the shore of this New World, feels as the Psalmist says, "his thoughts crowd upon him like a multitude". Compared with the eddying waters of this new stream of life, the old stream, in which he has moved seems, almost frostbound and dull; and while at home the stealing phantom of approaching Social Death now and then made him shiver for the horrors of the future, here the rippling and sparkling waves around him speak of an everhigher development of human life to come. Here, on American ground, he catches at once the magic spirit of Longfellow's "Excelsior". Here, for the first time, he realizes how so many divine potencies, hidden away in the bosom of mankind from our very creation, but which our old world was incapable of developing, are now beginning to disclose their inward splendour, thus promising a still richer store of surprises for the Future.

Not that you would ask me to forget the superiority which, in many respects, the Old World may still claim, in your eyes, as well as in mine.

Old Europe remains even now the bearer of a longer historical past, and therefore stands before you as a deeper





rooted tree, hiding between its leaves the more matured fruits of life. In one word, you are yet in your Springtide,—we are passing through our Fall;—and the harvest of Autumn has an enchantment of its own.

But, although, on the other hand, I fully acknowledge your privilege that (to use another simile) the train of life travels with you so immeasurably faster than with us,—leaving us miles and miles behind,—still we both feel that there is not a separate life in Old Europe and another here, but that it is one and the same current of human existence that rolls through both continents;—a vast uninterrupted tide, which entered Europe from Asia, then passed from Europe to America, and is now further developing itself in this New World, ever moving westward.

By virtue of our common origin *you* may call us bone of your bone,—*we* feel that you are flesh of our flesh, and although you are outstripping us in the most discouraging way, you will never forget that the historic cradle of your wondrous youth stood in our old Europe, and was rocked most gently in my once so mighty Fatherland.

Moreover, besides this common parentage, there is another factor which, in the face of even a wider difference, would continue to unite your interests and ours. Far more precious to us, even than the development of human life, is the crown which ennobles it, and this noble crown of life for you and for me rests in the Christian name. That crown is our common heritage, and under the glory of that crown we are and feel united, in the closest and most holy brotherhood. It was not from Greece or Rome that the regeneration of human life came forth;—that mighty metamorphosis dates from Bethlehem and Golgotha; and if the Reformation, in a still more special sense, claims the love of our hearts, it is because it has dispelled the clouds of sacerdotalism, and has unveiled again to fullest view the glories of the cross. But, in deadly opposition to this Christian element, against this very Christian name,





and against its salutiferous influence in every sphere of life, has now arisen, with such a violent intensity, the storm of Modernism.

In 1789 the turning point was reached.

Voltaire's mad cry "*Ecrasez l'infâme*" aimed at Christ himself, and this cry it was that gave utterance to the most hidden thought from which the French Revolution sprang. The fanatic outcry of another philosopher "We no more need a God", and the odious shibboleth "No God, no Master", of the Convention,—these were the sacrilegious watchwords which at that time heralded the liberation of man as an emancipation from all Divine Authority. And if, in His impenetrable Wisdom, God employed that revolution as a means by which to overthrow the tyranny of the Bourbons, and to bring a judgment on the princes who abused His nations as their footstool, nevertheless the principle of that Revolution remains thoroughly anti-Christian, and has since eaten its way like a cancer, dissolving and undermining all that stood firm and consistent before our Christian faith.

This anti-Christian power has since been strengthened by the richness of forms in which German Modernism unfolded itself, thereby rendering Pantheism so generally acceptable that in Darwin's evolution—theory its idea of an uninterrupted process has been hailed as the physiological basis of every existing thing. And what is still more lamentable, even in the church of Christ itself this poisonous toxin has forced an entrance, and under cover of a pious mysticism or in the garment of historic clearness, has attacked, first the sacredness of the church, after that the Holy Scripture, and at last even the holy person of our Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ. No doubt therefore but that Christianity is imperilled by great and serious dangers. Two world-views are wrestling one with another, in mortal combat. Modernism is bound to build a world of its own from the data of the natural man, and to con-





struct man himself from the data of nature, while, on the other hand, all those who reverently bend the knee to Christ and worship Him as the Son of the Living God are bent upon saving the "Christian Heritage" for the world at large, confident, by this heritage, to lead her up to a still higher development. This is *the* struggle in Europe, this is *the* struggle in America, and this also, is the struggle for principles, in which my own country is engaged, and in which I myself have exhausted for nearly forty years every energy at my disposal.

In this struggle Apologetics have advanced us no single step. Apologetics have invariably begun by abandoning the assailed breastwork, in order to entrench themselves in a ravelin behind it.

Therefore, from the first, I have always said to myself:—"If the battle is to be fought with honour and with a hope of victory, then principle must be arrayed against principle; then it must be felt that in Modernism the vast energy of an all-embracing principle assails us, and then it must be understood that we have to take our stand in a principle of equally comprehensive and far-reaching power. And this powerful principle is not to be invented nor formulated by ourselves, but it is to be taken and applied as it presents itself in life, with its roots in the past, and its branches spread over our present existence. It will not do therefore to say that this principle is Christianity itself. Such a general principle, taken in an absolute sense, necessarily remains a pure abstraction, and only in its historical, its farthest, and its purest revelation can it supply us with the needed vigor for resistance;—and when thus taken, I found and confessed, and I still hold, that this manifestation of the Christian principle is given us in Calvinism. In Calvinism has my heart found rest. From Calvinism have I drawn the inspiration, firmly and resolutely to take my stand in the thick of this great conflict of principles. And therefore, when I was invited to give





the *Stone* Lectures here this year, I could not hesitate a moment as to my choice of subject. Calvinism, as the only decisive, lawful, and consistent defence for Protestant nations against encroaching, and overwhelming Modernism,—this of itself was bound to be my theme. Not that my personal experience can be of interest to you, but because it is the same conflict which engages you here, and us in Europe, and because in such an universal struggle, the more a testimony is based upon personal experience, the higher its significance, and the richer its value.

Allow me therefore, in six lectures, to speak to you on Calvinism. First on *Calvinism in History*, that we may clearly understand what Calvinism is. Then on *Calvinism and Religion*. Again on Calvinism as a *political* phenomenon;—After that on Calvinism as a social force, first in *Science*, and then in *Art*. And, finally, on the hope which in Calvinism, is laid away *for the Future*.

Clearness of presentation demands that in this first lecture I begin by fixing the *conception* of Calvinism *historically*. To prevent misunderstanding we must first know what we should not, and what we should, understand by it. Starting therefore from the current use of the term. I find that this is by no means the same in different countries and spheres of life. The name Calvinist is used in our times most generally as a sectarian name; this is not the case in Protestant, but in Romish countries, especially in Hungary and France. In Hungary the Reformed Churches have a membership of some two and one-half millions, and in both the Romish and Jewish press her members are constantly stigmatized by the non-official name of “Calvinists”. A derisive name applied even to those who have divested themselves of all traces of sympathy with the faith of their fathers. The same phenomenon presents itself in France, especially in the Southern parts, where „Calviniste” is



equally, and even more emphatically a sectarian stigma, which does not refer to the faith or confession of the stigmatized person, but is simply put upon every communicant of the Reformed Churches, even though he be an atheist. George Thiéband, known for his anti-semitic propaganda, has at the same time revived the anti-Calvinistic spirit in France, and even in the Dreyfus case "Jews and Calvinists" were arraigned by him as the two anti-national forces as prejudicial to the "esprit gaulois". This sectarian use of the name "Calvinist" is derived from the Romish polemicists, who from the beginning were accustomed to attack by this ominous term what seemed to them the most dangerous form of Protestantism. This first significance however of the name "Calvinist" is of no importance whatsoever for the understanding and appreciation of Calvinism, because it is purely external, and independent of all spiritual confession. — Directly opposed to this is the second use of the word Calvinism, and this I call the *confessional* use. In this sense a Calvinist is represented exclusively as the outspoken subscriber to the dogma of fore-ordination. They who disapprove of this strong attachment to the doctrine of predestination cooperate with the Romish polemicist, in that by calling you "Calvinist" they represent you as a victim of dogmatic narrowness and what is worse still as being dangerous to the real seriousness of moral life. On the other hand there are theologians, who from fulness of conviction are open defenders of Predestination, and who count it their honor to be Calvinists, but who are so impressed with the disfavor attached to the "Calvinistic name", that for the sake of commending their conviction, they prefer to speak rather of Augustinianism than of Calvinism. This is what Hodge did—whose studies I so deeply appreciate. — The ecclesiastical title of some Baptists and Methodists indicates a third use of the name Calvinist. No less a man than Spurgeon belonged to a class of Baptists who in England call themselves "Calvinistic Baptists", and





the Whitfield Methodists in Wales to this day bear the name of "Calvinistic Methodists". Thus here also it indicates a confessional difference, but is applied as the name for special church-denominations. Without doubt this practice would have been most severely criticized by Calvin himself. During his life-time no Reformed Church ever dreamed of naming the Church of Christ after any man. The Lutherans have done this, the Reformed Churches never. . . . ' But beyond this sectarian, confessional, and ecclesiastical use of the name "Calvinist", it serves moreover as a scientific term, either in an historical, philosophical or political sense. Historically the name of Calvinism indicates the channel in which the Reformation moved, so far as it was neither Lutheran, Anabaptist nor Socinian. In the philosophical sense we understand by it that system of conceptions, which under the influence of the master-mind of Calvin raised itself to dominance in the several spheres of life. And as a political name Calvinism indicates that political movement which has guaranteed the liberty of nations in constitutional statesmanship; first in Holland; then in England; and since the close of the last century in the United States. In this scientific sense the name of Calvinism is especially current among German scholars. And the fact that this not only is the opinion of those who are themselves of Calvinistic sympathies, but that also scholars who have abandoned every confessional standard of Christianity nevertheless assign this profound significance to Calvinism, appears from the testimony borne by three of our best men of science, the first of whom, Dr. Robbert Fruin declares that: "Calvinism came into the Netherlands consisting of a logical system of Divinity, of a democratic Church-order of its own, impelled by a severely-moral sense, and as enthusiastic for the moral as for the religious reformation of mankind". Another historian, who was even more outspoken in his rationalistic sympathies writes: "Calvinism is the highest form of development reached by the religious





and political principle in the 16th century". And a third authority acknowledges that Calvinism has liberated Switzerland, the Netherlands and England, and in the Pilgrim Fathers has provided the impulse to the prosperity of the United States..... And only in this last-named, strictly-scientific sense do I desire to speak to you on Calvinism as an independent general tendency, which from a motherprinciple of its own has developed an independent form both for our *life* and for our *thought* among the nations of Western Europe and North America, and at present even in Southern Africa.

The domain of Calvinism is indeed far broader than the narrow confessional interpretation would lead us to suppose. The aversion to naming the Church after a man gave rise to the fact, that though in France the Protestants were called "Huguenots", in the Netherlands "Beggars", in Great Britain "Puritans" and "Presbyterians", and in North America "Pilgrim Fathers", yet all these products of the reformation which on your continent and ours bore the special Reformed type.... were of Calvinistic origin. But the extent of the Calvinistic domain should not be limited to these purer revelations. Nobody applies such an exclusive rule to Christianity. Within its boundaries we embrace not only Western Europe, but also Russia, the Balkan States, the Armenians, and even Menelik's empire in Abyssinia. Therefore it is but just that in the same way we should include in the Calvinistic fold those churches also which have diverged more or less from its purer forms. In her 39 articles the Church of England is strictly Calvinistic, even though in her Hierarchy and Liturgy she has abandoned the straight paths, and has met with the serious results of this departure in Puseyism and Ritualism. The confession of the Independents was equally Calvinistic, even though in their conception of the Church, the organic structure was broken by individualism. And if under the leadership of Wesley most Methodists became opposed to the theological interpretation of Calvinism, it is nevertheless the Calvinistic



spirit itself that created this spiritual reaction against the petrifying church-life of the times. In a given sense therefore it may be said, that the entire field which in the end was covered by the Reformation, so far as it was not Lutheran and not Socinian, was dominated in principle by Calvinism. Even the Baptists applied for shelter at the tents of the Calvinists. It is the free character of Calvinism that accounts for the rise of these several shades and differences, and of the reactions against their excesses. By its hierarchy Romanism is and remains uniform. Lutheranism owes its similar unity and uniformity to the ascendancy of the prince, whose relation to the Church is that of "summus episcopus" and to its "ecclesia docens". Calvinism on the other hand, which sanctions no ecclesiastical hierarchy, and no magisterial interference, could not develop itself except in many and varied forms and deviations, thereby of course incurring the danger of degeneration, provoking in its turn all kind of one-sided reactions. With the free development of life, such as was intended by Calvinism, the distinction could not fail to appear between a *centrum*, with its fulness and purity of vitality and strength, and the broad *circumference* with its threatening declensions. But in that very conflict between a pure and less pure development the steady working of its spirit was guaranteed to Calvinism.

Thus understood Calvinism is rooted in a form of religion which was peculiarly its own, and from this specific religious consciousness there was developed first a peculiar theology, then a special church-order, and then a given form for political and social life, for the interpretation of the moral world-order, for the relation between nature and grace, between christianity and the world, between church and state, and finally for art and science, and amid all these life-utterances it remained always the self-same Calvinism, in so far as simultaneously and spontaneously all these developments sprang from its deepest life-principle.





Hence to this extent it stands in line with those other great complexes of human life, known as Paganism, Islamism, Romanism and Protestantism, by which we distinguish four entirely different worlds in the one collective world of human life. And if strictly considered you should coordinate Christianity and not Protestantism with Paganism and Islamism, it is nevertheless better to place Calvinism in line with them, because Calvinism claims to embody the Christian idea more purely and accurately than could Romanism and Lutheranism. In the Greek world of Russia and the Balkan States the national element is still dominant, and therefore the Christian faith in these countries has not been able to produce a form of life of its own from the root of its mystical orthodoxy. In Lutheran countries the interference of the magistrate has prevented the free working of the spiritual principle. Hence of Romanism only can it be said, that it has embodied its life-thought in a world of conceptions and utterances entirely its own. But by the side of Romanism, and in opposition to it, Calvinism made its appearance, not merely to create a different Church-form, but an entirely different form for human life, to furnish human society with a different method of existence, and to populate the world of the human heart with different ideals and conceptions.

That this had not been realised until our time, and is now acknowledged by friend and enemy in consequence of a better study of history, should not surprise us. This would not have been the case, if Calvinism had entered life as a well-constructed system, and had presented itself as an outcome of study. But its origin came about in an entirely different way. In the order of existence life is first. And to Calvinism life itself was ever the first object of its endeavours. There was too much to do and to suffer to devote much time to study. What was dominant was Calvinistic practice at the stake and in the field of battle. Moreover the nations among whom Calvinism gained the day,—such as the Swiss, the Dutch, the English



and the Scotch—were by nature not very philosophically predisposed. Especially at that time life among those nations was spontaneous and void of calculation, and only later on has Calvinism in its parts become a subject of that special study by which historians and theologians have traced the relation between Calvinistic phenomena and the all-embracing unity of its principle. It can even be said that the need of a theoretic and systematic study of so incisive and comprehensive a phenomenon of life, only arises, when its first vitality has been exhausted, and when for the sake of maintaining itself in the future it is compelled to greater accuracy in the drawing of its boundary-lines. And if to this you add the fact that the stress of reflecting our existence in the mirror of our consciousness with unity of image is far stronger in our philosophical age than it ever was before, it is readily seen that both the needs of the present, and the care for the future, compel us to a deeper study of Calvinism. In the Romish Church everybody knows what he lives for, because with clear consciousness he enjoys the fruit of Rome's interpretation of life. Even in Islam you find the same power of a conviction of life dominated by one principle. Protestantism alone wanders about in the wilderness without aim or direction, moving hither and thither, without making any progress. This accounts for the fact that among Protestant nations Pantheism, born from the New German Philosophy and owing its concrete evolution-form to Darwin, claims for itself more and more the supremacy in every sphere of human life, even in that of theology, and under all sorts of names tries to overthrow our Christian traditions, and is bent even upon exchanging the heritage of our fathers for a hopeless modern Buddhism. The leading thoughts, that had their rise in the French Revolution at the close of the last, and in German philosophy in the course of the present century, form together a world- and life-view which is diametrically opposed to that of our fathers. Their





struggles were for the sake of the glory of God and a purified Christianity, the present movement wages war for the sake of the glory of man, being inspired not by the humble mind of Golgotha but by the pride of Humanism. And why did we, Christians, stand so weak, in the face of this Modernism? Why did we constantly lose ground? Simply because we were devoid of an equal unity of life-conception, such as alone could enable us with irresistible energy to rebuff the enemy at the frontier. This unity of life-conception however is never to be found in a vague conception of Protestantism winding itself as it does in all kind of tortuosities but you do find it in that mighty historic process, which as Calvinism dug a channel of its own for the powerful stream of its life. By this unity of conception alone as given in Calvinism, you in America and we in Europe, might be enabled once again to take our stand, by the side of Romanism, in opposition to modern Pantheism. Without this unity of starting-point and historic interpretation of life the power must fail us to maintain our independent position, and our strength for resistance ebb away.

The supreme interest here at stake however forbids our accepting without more positive proof the fact that Calvinism really provides us with such an unity of life-conception, and that Calvinism is not a partial nor was a merely temporary phenomenon, but is an all-embracing system of principles, such as rooted in the past, is able to strengthen us in the present and to fill us with confidence for the future. Hence we must first ask what are the required conditions for such general systems of life, as Paganism, Islamism, Romanism and Modernism, and then show that Calvinism really fulfills these conditions.

These conditions demand in the first place that from a special principle a peculiar insight should arise into the three fundamental relations of all human life; viz., 1. our



relation *to God* 2. our relation *to man*, and 3. our relation *to the world*.

Hence the first claim demands: that such an action shall find its starting-point in a special interpretation of our relation to God. This is not accidental, but imperative. If such an action is to put its impress upon our entire life, it must go out from that point in our consciousness, in which our life is still undivided and lies comprehended in its unity,—not in the spreading vines but in the root from which the vines spring. This point of course lies in the antithesis between all that is finite in our human life and the infinite that lies beyond it. Here alone we find the common source from which the different streams of our human life spring and separate themselves. Personally it is our repeated experience that in the depths of our hearts, at the point where we disclose ourselves to the Eternal One, all the rays of our life converge as in one focus, and there alone regain that harmony which we so often and so painfully lose in the stress of daily duty. In prayer lies not only our unity with God, but also the unity of our personal life. Movements in history therefore which do not spring from this deepest source are always partial and transient, and only those historical acts, which arose from these deepest depths of man's personal existence embrace the whole of life and possess the required permanence.

This was the case with Paganism, which in its most general form is known by the fact, that it surmises, assumes and worships God *in* the creature. This applies to lowest Animism, as well as to highest Buddhism. Paganism does not rise to the conception of the independent existence of a God beyond and above the creature. But even in this imperfect form it has for its starting-point a definite interpretation of the relation of the infinite to the finite, and to this it owed its power to produce a finished form for human society. Simply because it possessed this significant starting-point was it able to produce a form of its own for the





whole of human life. It is the same with Islamism, which is characterized by its purely anti-paganistic ideal cutting off all contact between the creature and God. Mohammed and the Koran are the historic names, but in its nature the Crescent is only the absolute antithesis to Paganism. Islam *isolates God from the creature*, in order to avoid all commingling with the creature. As antipode Islam was possessed of an equally far-reaching tendency, and was also able to originate an entirely peculiar world of human life. The same is the case with Romanism. Here also the papal tiara, the hierarchy, the mass, etc., are but the outcome of one fundamental thought: viz., that God enters into fellowship with the creature *by means of a mystic middle-link* which is the Church; not taken as a mystic organism, but as a visible, palpable and tangible institute. Here the Church stands *between* God and the world, and so far as it was able to adopt the world and to inspire it, Romanism also created a form of its own for human society. And now by the side of and over against these three, Calvinism takes its stand with a fundamental thought which is equally profound. It does not seek God *in* the creature, as Paganism; it does not *isolate* God *from* the creature, as Islamism; it posits no *mediate communion* between God and the creature, as does Romanism; but proclaims the exalted thought that although standing in high majesty above the creature God enters *into immediate fellowship with the creature* by means of his Holy Spirit. This is even the heart and kernel of the Calvinistic confession of predestination. There is communion with God, but only in entire accord with his counsel of peace from all eternity. Thus there is no grace, but such as comes to us immediately from God. At every moment of our existence our entire spiritual life rests in God Himself. The Deo Soli Gloria was not the starting-point but the result, and predestination was inexorably maintained not for the sake of separating man from man, nor in the interest of



personal pride, but in order to guarantee from eternity to eternity a direct and immediate communion with the Living God. The opposition against Rome aimed therefore with the Calvinist first of all at the dismissal of a church, which placed itself between the soul and God. The church consisted not in an office, nor in an independent institute, the believers themselves were the Church, in as much as by faith they stood in touch with the Almighty. Thus as in Paganism, Islamism and Romanism, so also in Calvinism is found that proper, definite interpretation of the fundamental relation of man to God, required as the first condition of a real life-system, that shall be able to create a form of its own for our human life.

Meanwhile I anticipate two objections. In the first place it may be asked: whether I do not claim honors for Calvinism which belong to Protestantism in general. To this I reply in the negative. When I claim the honor for Calvinism of having reestablished the direct fellowship with God, I do not undervalue the general significance of Protestantism. In the Protestant domain, taken in the historic sense, Lutheranism alone stands by the side of Calvinism. Now I wish to be second to none in my praises of Luther's heroic initiative. In his heart, rather than in the heart of Calvin, was the bitter conflict fought which led to the world historic breach. Luther can be interpreted without Calvin, but not Calvin without Luther. To a great extent Calvin entered upon the harvest of what the hero of Wittenberg had sown in and outside Germany. But when the question is put who had the clearest insight into the reformatory principle, worked it out most fully, and applied it most broadly, history points to the Reformer of Geneva and not to the hero of Wittenberg. Luther as well as Calvin contended for a direct fellowship with God, but he took it up from its subjective, anthropological side, and not from its objective, theological side as Calvin did. Luther's starting-point was the special-soteriological principle of a justifying





faith; while Calvin's extending far wider, lay in the general cosmological principle of the sovereignty of God. As a natural result of this Luther also restored the Church as the representative and authoritative "teacher" between God and the believer, while Calvin was the first to seek the Church *in the believers themselves*. As far as he was able Luther still leaned upon the Romish view of the sacraments, and upon the Romish cultus, while Calvin was the first in both to draw the line which extended immediately from God to man and from man to God. Moreover in all Lutheran countries the Reformation originated from the princes rather than from the people, and thereby passed under the power of the magistrate, who took his stand in the Church officially as her "summus episcopus", and therefore was unable to change either the social or the political life in accordance with its principle. Lutheranism restricted itself to an exclusively ecclesiastical and theological character, while Calvinism put its impress in and outside the church upon every department of human life. Hence Lutheranism is nowhere spoken of as the creator of a peculiar life-form; even the name of "Lutheranism" is now rarely mentioned; while the students of history with increasing unanimity recognize Calvinism as the creator of a world of human life entirely its own. And if for this reason "Lutheranism" is of no account to us here, the general conception of "Protestantism" as such is of still less significance, because this indicates merely a negative idea, and is now valued most highly in those deviating circles in which the breach with our reformatory confession has become a final one.

The second question which may be put by way of objection is: If it is true that every general development-form of life must find its starting-point in a peculiar interpretation of our relation to God,—how then do you explain the fact, that Modernism has led to such a general conception, although it sprang from the French Revolution



which broke with all religion on principle. The question answers itself. By excluding all reckoning with the Living God from your conceptions and practice, such as is implied in the cry: "no God no master", you certainly bring to the front an interpretation of your own for our relation to God. A government that recalls its ambassador and breaks every relation with another power, declares thereby that its relation to the government of that country is a strained relation, which generally ends in war. This is the case here. The leaders of the French Revolution, not being acquainted with any relation to God except that which existed through the mediation of the Romish Church annihilated all relation to God, because they wished to annihilate the power of the Church; and as a result of this they declared war against every religious confession. But this of course very really implied a fundamental and special interpretation of our relation to God. It was the declaration that henceforth God was to be considered as dead, if not yet to the heart, at least to the state, to society and to science. To be sure in passing from French into German hands, Modernism could not rest content with such a bare negation, but the result shows how from that moment it clothed itself in either pantheism or agnosticism, and under each disguise it maintained the expulsion of God from practical and theoretical life. The effect worked upon our life by our relation to God is of the highest importance to our processes of thought, and both by Pantheism and Agnosticism this precious element is reduced to nothing. All that is conceived and established by man under the inspiration of these two philosophical tendencies rests exclusively on the human factor, and is unable to rise above the low level of Humanism.

Thus I maintain that the conception of our relation to God is the fundamental interpretation which dominates every general development-form of human life, and that for us this conception is given in Calvinism, thanks to its



fundamental interpretation of an immediate fellowship of God with man and man with God. To this I add that Calvinism has neither invented nor conceived this fundamental interpretation, but that God himself implanted it in the hearts of its heroes and its heralds. We face here no product of a clever intellectualism, but the fruit of a work of God in the heart, or, if you like, an inspiration of history. This point should be emphasized. Calvinism has never burned its incense upon the altar of genius, it has erected no monument for its heroes, it scarcely calls them by name. One stone only in a wall at Geneva remains to remind one of Calvin. His very grave has been forgotten. Was this ingratitude? By no means. But if Calvin was appreciated, already in the 16<sup>th</sup> and 17<sup>th</sup> centuries the impression was vivid that it was One greater than Calvin, even God Himself, who had wrought here *His* work. Hence no general movement in life is so devoid of deliberate compact and conventionality of radiation as this. Simultaneously Calvinism had its rise in all the countries of Western Europe, and it appeared, among those nations not because the university was in its van, or because scholars led the people, or because a magistrate placed himself at their head, but it sprang from the hearts of the people themselves; with weavers and farmers, with tradesmen and servants, with women and young maidens; and in every instance it exhibited the same characteristic: viz., strong *Assurance of faith* not only without the intervention of the Church, but even in opposition to the Church. The human heart had attained unto eternal peace with its God; strengthened by this Divine fellowship, it discovered its high and holy calling, to consecrate every department of life and every energy at its disposal to the glory of God; and therefore when those men or women, who had become partakers of this Divine life, were forced to abandon their faith, it proved impossible, they could not deny their Lord and thousands and tens of thousands burned at the stake,





not complaining but exulting, with thanksgiving in their hearts and psalms upon their lips. Calvin was not the author of this, but God Who through his Holy Spirit had wrought in Calvin that which He had wrought in them. Calvin stood not above them, but as a brother by their side, a sharer with them of God's blessing. In this way Calvinism came to its fundamental interpretation of an immediate fellowship with God, not because Calvin invented it, but because in this immediate fellowship God Himself had granted to our fathers a privilege, of which Calvin was the first to become clearly conscious. This is the great work of the Holy Spirit in history, by which Calvinism has been consecrated, and which interprets to us its wondrous energy.

There are times in history when the pulse of religious life beats faintly; and there are times when its beat is bounding, and the latter was the case in the 16<sup>th</sup> century among the nations of Western Europe. At the close of the middle ages the question of faith dominated every activity in public life. New history starts out from this faith, even as the history of our times starts from the unbelief of the French Revolution. What law this pulse-like movement of religious life obeys, we cannot tell, but it is evident that there is such a law, and that in times of high religious tension the inworking of the Holy Spirit upon the heart is irresistible. The apostle refers to it when he speaks of a divine force which is quick and powerful and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, a discernor of the thoughts and intents of the heart. And this mighty inworking of God was the experience of our Calvinists, Puritans and Pilgrim Fathers. It was not in all individuals to the same degree, for this never happens in any great movement, but they who formed the centre of life in those times, who were the promoters of that mighty change, they experienced this



higher power to the fullest: and they were the men and women of every class of society and nationality who by God Himself were admitted into communion with the majesty of His eternal Being. Thanks to this work of God in the heart the persuasion that the whole of a mans life is to be lived as *in the Divine Presence* has become the fundamental thought of Calvinism. By this decisive idea, or rather by this mighty fact, it has allowed itself to be controlled in every department of its entire domain. It is from this mother-thought that the all-embracing life-view of Calvinism sprang.

---

This brings us of itself to the second condition, with which, for the sake of creating a special form for human life every profound movement has to comply: viz., a fundamental interpretation of its own touching *the relation of man to man*. How we stand toward God is the first, and how we stand toward man is the second principal question, which decides the tendency and the construction of our life. There is no uniformity among men, but endless multiplicity. In creation itself the difference has been established between woman and man. Physical and spiritual gifts and talents cause one person to differ from the other. Past generations and our own personal life create distinctions. The social position of the rich and poor also differs. These differences may be weakened or accentuated by our interpretation of life, and Paganism and Islamism, Romanism as well as Modernism, and so also Calvinism have all taken their stand in this question in accordance with their primordial principle. If as Paganism contends, God dwells *in the creature*, divine superiority is exhibited in whatever is high among men. In this way it got its demigods, hero-worship, and finally its sacrifices upon the altar of Divus Augustus. On the other hand whatever is lower and godless gives rise to the systems of caste





in India and in Egypt, and to slavery everywhere else, thereby placing one man under a base subjection to his fellowman. Under Islamism, which dreams of its paradise of *houries* sensuality usurps public authority, and woman is the slave of man, even as the kafir is the slave of the Moslim. Romanism, rooting in Christian soil, overcomes the absolute character of distinction, and renders it relative, but in order to interpret every relation of man to man hierarchically. There is a hierarchy among the angels of God, a hierarchy in God's Church, a hierarchy in life, and so it has an entirely aristocratic interpretation of life as the embodiment of the ideal. Finally Modernism, which denies and abolishes every difference, cannot rest until it has made woman man and man woman, and, putting every distinction on a common level, kills life by placing it under the ban of uniformity. One type must answer for all, one uniform, one position and one and the same development of life; and whatever goes beyond and above it, is looked upon as an insult to the common consciousness. In the same way Calvinism has derived from *its* fundamental relation to God a peculiar interpretation of man's relation to man, and it is this only true relation, which since the 16<sup>th</sup> century has been gaining the day. If Calvinism places our entire human life immediately before God, then it follows that all men or women, rich or poor, weak or strong, dull or talented, as creatures of God, and as lost sinners, have no claim whatsoever to lord it one over an other, and that we stand as equals before God, and consequently equal as man to man. Hence we cannot recognize any distinction among men, save such as has been imposed by God Himself, in that He gave one to have authority over the other, or enriched one with more talents than the other, in order that the man of more talents should serve the man with less, and in him serve his God. Hence Calvinism condemns not merely all open slavery and systems of caste, but also all



covert slavery of woman and of the poor; it is opposed to all hierarchy among men, it tolerates no aristocracy save such as is able, either in person or in family, by the grace of God, to exhibit superiority of character or talent, and to show that it does not claim this superiority for self-aggrandizement or ambitious pride, but for the sake of spending it in the service of God. Hence Calvinism was bound to find its utterance in the democratic interpretation of life; to proclaim the liberty of nations; and not to rest until both politically and socially every man, simply because he is man, should be recognized, respected and dealt with as a creature created after the Divine likeness.

This was no outcome of envy. It was not the man of lower estate who reduced his superior to his level in order to usurp the higher place, but it was a kneeling in concert of all men at the feet of the Holy One of Israel. This accounts for the fact that it made no sudden break with the past. Even as in its early stage Christianity did not abolish slavery, but undermined it by a moral judgment, so Calvinism allowed the provisional continuance of the conditions of hierarchy and aristocracy as traditions belonging to the Middle Ages. It was not laid up as a charge against him, that William of Orange was a prince of royal lineage; he was the more honored for it. But inwardly Calvinism has modified the structure of society not by the envying of classes, nor by an undue esteem for the possessions of the rich, but by a more serious interpretation of life. By better labor and a higher development of character the middle and working classes have provoked the nobility and the wealthier citizens to jealousy. First looking to God, and then to one's neighbor was the impulse, the mind and the spiritual custom to which Calvinism gave entrance. And from this holy fear of God and this united stand before the face of God a holier democratic idea has developed itself, and has evermore gained ground. This result has been brought about by nothing so much as by fellow-



ship in suffering. When, though loyal to the Romish faith, the dukes of Egmont and Horne ascended the same scaffold on which, for the sake of a nobler faith, the working-man and the weaver had been executed, in that bitter death the reconciliation between the classes received its sanction. By his bloody persecutions, Alva the Aristocrat advanced the prosperous development of the spirit of Democracy. To have placed man on a footing of equality with man, so far as the purely human interests are concerned, is the immortal glory which incontestably belongs to Calvinism. The difference between it and the Utopian dream of equality of the French Revolution is: that while in Paris it was one action in concert *against* God, here all were on their knees *before* God, consumed with a common zeal for the glory of His Name.

---

The third fundamental relation which decides the interpretation of life is the relation which you bear *to the world*. As said before, there are three principle elements with which you come in touch: viz., God, man and the world. Having reviewed the relation in which Calvinism places you to God and to man, the third and last fundamental relation is in order: viz., your attitude *toward the world*. Of Paganism it can be said in general, that it places too high an estimate upon the world, and therefore to some extent it both stands in fear of, and loses itself in it. On the other hand Islamism places too low an estimate upon the world, makes game of it and triumphs over it in reaching after the visionary world of a sensual paradise. For the purpose in hand however we need say no more of either, since both for Christian Europe and America the antithesis between man and the world has assumed the narrower form of the antithesis between the world and the Christian. The traditions of the Middle Ages gave rise to this. Under the hierarchy of Rome the Church and





the World were placed over against each other, the one as being sanctified and the other as being still under the curse. Everything outside the Church was in the hands of demons, and exorcism banished this demoniacal power from everything that came under the protection, influence and inspiration of the Church. Hence in a Christian country the entire social life was to be covered by the wings of the Church. The magistrate had to be anointed and confessionally bound, art and science had to be placed under ecclesiastical animation and censure, trade and commerce had to be bound to the Church by the tie of guilds, and from the cradle to the grave family life was to be placed under ecclesiastical guardianship. This was a gigantic effort to claim the entire world for Christ, but one which of necessity brought with it the severest judgment upon every life-tendency which either as heretical or as demoniacal withdrew itself from the blessing of the Church. Hence the stake was fit alike for witch and heretic, for in principle they lay under the same ban. And this deadening theory was carried out with iron logic, not from cruelty, nor from any low ambition, but from the lofty purpose of saving the christianized world, i.e., the world as overshadowed by the Church. This of course avenged itself in the introduction of the world into the Church, and in the antithesis between the noisy carnival and the mystical absorption in the sufferings of Christ, the discord between spiritual aspirations and worldly sensualism came out in the most irritating way. Escape from the world was the counterpoise in monastic and partly even in clerical orders, which emphasized holiness in the centrum of the Church in order to wink the more lightly at worldly excesses without. As a natural result the world corrupted the Church, and by its dominion over the world the Church proved an obstacle in the way of the world's free development of its life.

Thus making its appearance in a well-ordered social state Calvinism has wrought an entire change in the



world of thoughts and conceptions. In this also, placing it self before the face of God, it has not only honored man for the sake of his likeness to the Divine image, but also the world as a Divine creation, and has at once placed to the front the great principle that there is a particular grace which works Salvation, and a common grace by which God, maintaining the life of the world, relaxes the curse which rests upon it, arrests its process of corruption, and thus allows the untrammelled development of our life in which to glorify Himself as Creator. Thus the Church receded in order to be nothing more nor less than the congregation of believers, and in every department the life of the world was not emancipated from God, but from the dominion of the Church; so that from the high moral standard among God's people alone the world might receive the antidote to its indwelling corruption. Thus domestic life regained its independence, trade and commerce realized their strength in liberty, art and science were set free from every ecclesiastical bond and restored to their own inspirations, and man began to understand the subjection of all nature with its hidden forces and treasures to himself as a holy duty, imposed upon him by the original ordinances of Paradise. Henceforth the curse should no longer rest upon the world itself, but upon that which is sinful in it, and instead of monastic flight from the world the duty is now emphasized of serving God in the world, in every position in life, life itself for the reason of its being secular being none the less divine. To praise God in the Church and serve Him in the world became the inspiring impulse, and in the Church, strength was to be gathered by which to resist temptation and sin in the world. Thus puritanic sobriety went hand in hand with the reconquest of the entire life of the world, and Calvinism gave the impulse to that new development which dared to face the world with the Roman thought: *nil humanum a me alienum puto*, although never allowing itself to be intoxicated by its poisonous cup.





Especially in its antithesis to Anabaptism Calvinism exhibits itself in bold relief. For Anabaptism adopted the opposite method, and in its effort to evade the world it confirmed the monastic starting-point generalizing it to a rule for all believers, and it was not from Calvinism, but from this anabaptistic principle, that Akosmism had its rise among certain Protestants in Western Europe. In fact Anabaptism adopted the Romish theory, with this difference: that it placed the kingdom of God in the room of the Church, and abandoned the distinction between the two moral standards, one for the clergy and the other for the laity. For the rest the Anabaptist's standpoint was: 1. that the unbaptized world was under the curse, for which reason he withdrew from all civil institutions; and 2. that the circle of baptized believers—with Rome the Church, but with him the kingdom of God—was duty bound to take all civil life under its guardianship and to remodel it; and so John of Leyden violently established his shameless power at Munster as King of the *New Zion*, and his devotees ran naked through the streets of Amsterdam. Hence on the same grounds on which Calvinism rejected Rome's theory concerning the world, it rejected the theory of the Anabaptist, and proclaimed that the Church must withdraw again within its spiritual domain, and that in the world we should realize the potencies of God's common grace in order that while emancipating the world from the Church we in our public life should feel bound by the holy ordinances of God.

Thus it is shown that Calvinism has a sharply-defined starting-point of its own for the three fundamental relations of all human existence: viz., our relation to God, to man and to the world. For our relation *to God*: an immediate fellowship of man with the Eternal, independently of priest or church. For the relation of man *to man*: the recognition in each person of human worth, which is his by virtue of his creation after the Divine likeness, and therefore of the



equality of all men before God and the legislation, each one occupying the position appointed him of God, and endowed with the talents divinely bestowed for divine purposes. And for our relation *to the world*: the recognition that in the whole world the curse is restrained by grace, that the life of the world is to be honored in its independence, and that we must, in every domain, discover the treasures and develop the potencies hidden by God in the world and in her life, the fear of God remaining our never failing guarantee against her corruption. This justifies us fully in our statement that Calvinism duly answers the three above-named conditions, and thus is incontestably entitled to take its stand by the side of Paganism, Islamism, Romanism and Modernism, and to claim for itself the glory of possessing a fixed well-defined principle of an all-embracing tendency.

But even this is not all. The fact that in a given circle Calvinism has formed an interpretation of life of its own, from which both in the spiritual and secular domain a special system arose for domestic and social life, justifies it to assert itself as an independent formation; but does not yet credit it with the honor of having led humanity as such up to a higher stage in its development, and therefore has not as yet attained that standpoint which alone could give it the right to claim for itself the energy and devotion of our hearts. In China it can be asserted with equal right that Confucianism has produced a form of its own for life in a given circle and with the Mongolian race that form of life rests upon a theory of its own. But what has China done for humanity in general, and for the steady development of our race? Even so far as the waters of its life were clear, they formed nothing but an isolated lake. Almost the same remark applies to the high development which was once the boast of India and to the state of things in Mexico and Peru in the days of Montezuma and



the Incas. In all these regions the people attained a high degree of development, but stopped there and, remaining isolated, in no way proved a benefit to humanity at large. This applies more strongly still to the life of the colored races on the coast and in the interior of Africa; a far lower form of existence reminding us not even of a lake but rather of pools and marshes. There is but one world-stream, broad and fresh, which from the beginning bore the promise of the future; this stream had its rise in Middle-Asia and the Levant, and has steadily continued its course from East to West. From Western Europe it has passed on to your Eastern States and from thence to California. The sources of this stream of development are found in Babylon and in the valley of the Nile. From thence it flowed on to Greece. From Greece it passed on to the Roman Empire. From the Romanic nations it continued its way to the North-western parts of Europe, and so from Holland and England it reached at length your continent. At present that stream is at a standstill. Its Western course through China and Japan is impeded, meanwhile no one can tell what forces for the future may yet lie slumbering in the Slavic races which have thus far failed of progress. But while this secret of the future is still veiled in mystery, the course of this world-stream from East to West can be denied by none; and therefore I am justified in saying: that Paganism, Islamism and Romanism are the three successive formations which this development had reached, when its further direction passed over into the hands of Calvinism; and that Calvinism in turn is now denied this leading influence by Modernism, the daughter of the French Revolution.

The succession of these four phases of development did not take place mechanically, with sharply outlined divisions and parts. This development of life is organic, and therefore each new period roots in the past. In its deepest logic Calvinism had already been apprehended by Augustine, had long





before Augustine been proclaimed in Rome by the Apostle in the Epistle to the Romans, and from Paul goes back to Israel and its prophets, yea to the tents of the patriarchs. Romanism does not make its appearance suddenly, as by one stroke of magic, but is the joint product of the three potencies of Israel's priesthood, the cross of Calvary, and the world-organization of the Roman Empire. Islam joins itself to Israel's Monism, to the Prophet of Nazareth, and to the tradition of the Koraishites. And even the Paganism of Babylon and Egypt on the one hand, and of Greece and Rome upon the other, stands organically related to what lay behind these nations, preceding the prosperity of their lives. But even so it is as clear as day that the supreme force in the central development of the human race moved along successively from Babylon and Egypt to Greece and Rome, then to the chief regions of the Papal dominion, and finally to the Calvinistic nations of Western Europe. If Israel flourished in the days of Babylon and Egypt, however high its standard, the direction and the development of our human race was not in the hands, of the sons of Abraham but in those of the Belshassars and the Pharaohs. Again, this leadership does not pass from Babylon and Egypt on to Israel but to Greece and Rome. However high the stream of Christianity had risen when Islam made its appearance, in the 8<sup>th</sup> and 9<sup>th</sup> centuries the followers of Mahomet were our teachers and with them rested the issue of the world. And though the hegemony of Romanism still maintained itself for a short time after the peace of Munster, no one questions the fact, that the higher development which we are now enjoying we owe neither to Spain nor to Austria, nor even to the Germany of that time, but to the Calvinistic countries of the Netherlands and to England of the 16<sup>th</sup> century. Under Louis XIV Romanism arrested this higher development in France, but only that in the French Revolution it might exhibit a ghastly caricature of Calvinism, which in its sad conse-



quences broke the inner strength of France as a nation, and weakened its international significance. The fundamental idea of Calvin has been transplanted from Holland and England to America, thus driving our higher development ever more Westward, until on the shores of the Pacific it now reverently abides whatsoever God has ordained. But no matter what mysteries the future may yet have to disclose the fact remains that the broad stream of the development of our race runs from Babylon to San Francisco, through the five stadia of Babylonian-Egyptian, Greek-Roman, Islamitic, Romanistic and Calvinistic civilization, and the present conflict in Europe as well as in America finds its main cause in the fundamental antithesis between the energy of Calvinism which proceeded from the throne of God, found the source of its power in the Word of God, and in every sphere of human life exalted the glory of God,—and its caricature in the French Revolution, which proclaimed its unbelief in the cry of: no God no master; and which presently in the form of German Pantheism is reducing itself more and more to a modern Paganism.

---

Thus you see I spoke none too boldly, when I claimed for Calvinism the honor of being neither an ecclesiastic, nor a theologic, nor a sectarian conception, but one of the principal phases in the general development of our human race; and among these the youngest, whose high calling it still remains to influence the further course of human life. And I make this statement without in any way undervaluing the importance of its caricature in Modernism,—but of this I will speak later on.—Just now however allow me to indicate another circumstance, which strengthens my principal statement, viz., *the commingling of blood* as thus far the physical basis of all higher human development. From the high-lands of Asia our human race came down in groups, and these in turn have been divided into races and nations;



and in entire conformity to the prophetic blessing of Noah the children of Shem and of Japheth have been the sole bearers of the development of the race. No impulse for any higher life has ever gone forth from the third group. With the two other groups a twofold phenomenon presents itself. There are tribal nations which have isolated themselves and others which have intermingled. Thus on the one hand there are groups which have dominated exclusively their own inherent forces and on the other hand groups which by commingling have crossed their traits with those of other tribes, so having attained a higher perfection. It is noteworthy that the process of human development steadily proceeds with those groups whose historic characteristic is not isolation but the commingling of blood. On the whole the Mongolian race has held itself apart, and in its isolation has bestowed no benefits upon our race at large. Behind the Himalayas a similar life secluded itself, and hence failed to impart any permanent impulse to the outside world. Even in Europe we find that with the Scandinavians and Slavs there was hardly any intermingling of blood, and, consequently having failed to develop a richer type, they have taken little part in the general development of human life. On the other hand the tablets from Babylon in our great Museums by the two languages of their inscriptions still show that in Mesopotamia the Aryan element of the Accadians mingled itself at an early period with the Semitic-Babylonian, and Egyptology leads us to conclude that in the land of the Pharaohs we deal from the beginning with a population produced by the mingling of two different tribes. No one believes any longer the pretended race-unity of the Greeks. In Greece as well as in Italy we deal with races of a later date who have intermingled with the earlier Pelasgians, Etruscians and others. Islam seems to be exclusively Arabic, but a study of the spread of Islamism among the Moors, Persians, Turks and other series of subjected tribes, with whom intermarriage was





common, at once reveals the fact that especially with Mahometans the commingling of blood was even greater than with their predecessors. When the leadership of the world passed into the hands of the Romanic nations, the same phenomenon presented itself in Italy, Spain, Portugal and France. In these cases the Aborigines were generally Basques or Celts, the Celts in turn being overcome by the Germanic tribes, and even as in Italy the East-Gots and Lombards, so in Spain the West-Gots, in Portugal the Swabians and in France the Franks instilled new blood into debilitated veins and to this wonderful rejuvenation the Romanic nations owed their vigor until far into the 16<sup>th</sup> century. Thus in the life of nations the same phenomenon repeats itself which so often strikes the Historian as a result of international marriages among princely families, viz., that the Hapsburgs and the Bourbons, the Oranges and the Hohenzollern, for instance, have been, century after century, productive of a host of most remarkable statesmen and heroes. The raiser of stock has aimed at the same effect in the crossing of different breeds, and botanists harvest large profits by obeying the same law of life with plants. And by itself it is not difficult to perceive that the union of natural powers, divided among different tribes, must be productive of a higher development. To this it should be added that the history of our race does not aim at the improvement of any single tribe, but at the development of mankind taken as a whole and therefore needs this commingling of blood in order to attain its end. For this reason we may expect that Calvinism also will obey this law, in fact history shows that the nations among whom Calvinism flourished most widely, exhibit in every way this mingling of races. In Switzerland the Germans, united with Italians and French: in France the Gauls, with Franks and Burgundians; in the Lowlands Celts and Welch with Germans; so also in England the old Celts and Anglo-saxons, were afterwards raised to a still higher standard



of national life by the invasion of the Normans. Indeed it may be said, that the three principal tribes of Western Europe, the Celtic, Romanic and Germanic elements under the leadership of the Germanic, give us the genealogy of the Calvinistic nations. In America, where Calvinism has come to unfold itself in a still higher liberty, this commingling of blood is assuming a larger proportion than has ever yet been known. Here the blood flows together from all the tribes of the ancient world, and again we have the Celts from Ireland, the Germans from Germany and Scandinavia, united to the Slavs from Russia and Poland, who promote still further this already vigorous intermingling of the races. This latter process takes place under the higher exponent that it is not merely the union of tribe with tribe, but that the old historic nations are dissolving themselves in order to allow the re-union of their members in one higher unity, constantly assimilated by the American type. In this respect also Calvinism fully meets the conditions imposed on every new phase of development in the life of humanity. It spread itself in a domain where it found the commingling of blood stronger than under Romanism, and in America raised this up to its highest conceivable realization.

---

Thus it is shown that Calvinism does not only meet the necessary condition of the mingling of blood, but that in the process of human development it also represents, with respect to this, a further stadium. In Babylon this commingling of blood was of small significance; it gains in importance with the Greeks and Romans; it goes further under Islamism; is dominant under Romanism; but only among Calvinistic nations does it reach its highest perfection. Here in America it is achieving the intermingling of *all* the nations of the old world. A similar climax of this process of human development is also exhibited by Cal-



vinism in the fact, that only under the influence of Calvinism does the impulse of public activity proceed from the people themselves. In the life of the nations also there is development from the under-age period to that of maturity. As in the family-life, during the years of childhood, the direction of affairs is in the hands of the parents, so also in the life of the nations it is but natural that during their under-age period first the Asiatic despot, then some eminent ruler, afterwards the priesthood, and finally both priest and magistrate together should stand at the head every movement. The history of the nations in Babylon of and under the Pharaohs, in Greece and Rome, under Islamism and under the papal system, fully confirms this course of development. But it is self-evident that this could not be the permanent state of things. Just because by this progress of development the nations finally came of age, they must at length reach that stadium in which the people awoke, stood up for their rights, and originated the movement that was to direct the course of future events; and in the rise of Calvinism this stadium appears to have been reached. Thus far every forward movement had gone forth from the authorities in State, Church or Science, and from thence had descended to the people. In Calvinism on the other hand the people themselves stand out in their broad ranks and from a spontaneity of their own, press forward to a higher form of social life and conditions. Calvinism had its rise with the people. In Lutheran countries the magistrate was still the leader in public advances, but in Switzerland, among the Huguenots, in Belgium, in the Netherlands, in Scotland and now in America the people themselves created the impetus. They seemed to have matured: to have reached the period in which they were of age. Even when in some cases the nobility took an heroic stand for the oppressed, their activity ended in nothing, and the middle class alone, by its undaunted energy, broke the barrier, and among these it





was the "common folk" to whose heroic initiative William the Silent as he himself acknowledges owed the success of his undertaking.

---

Hence as a central phenomenon in the development of humanity Calvinism is not only entitled to an honorable position by the side of Paganistic, Islamistic and Romanistic forms, since like these it represents a peculiar principle dominating the whole of life, but it also meets every required condition for the advancement of human development another stadium. And yet this would remain a bare possibility without any corresponding reality, if history did not testify that Calvinism has actually caused the stream of human life to flow in another channel, and has ennobled the social life of the nations. And therefore in closing I assert that Calvinism not only held out these possibilities but has also understood how to realize them. To prove this, just ask yourselves what would have become of Europe and America, in case in the 16th century the star of Calvinism had not suddenly arisen on the horizon of Western Europe. In that case Spain would have crushed the Netherlands. In England and Scotland the Stuarts would have carried out their fatal plans. In Switzerland the spirit of half-heartedness would have gained the day. And the beginnings of life in this new world would have been of an entirely different character. And as a necessary sequence the balance of power in Europe would have returned to its former stand. Protestantism would not have been able to maintain itself in politics. No further resistance could have been offered to the Romish-conservative power of the Hapsburgs, the Bourbons and the Stuarts; and the free development of the nations, as seen in Europe and America, would simply have been prevented. The whole American continent would have remained subject to Spain; the history of both continents would have become a most mournful one and it ever remains a question whether the spirit of the



Leipzig Interim would not have succeeded, by way of a romanized Protestantism, in reducing Northern Europe again to the sway of the old Hierarchy. The enthusiastic devotion of the best historians of the second half of this century to the struggle of the Netherlands against Spain, as one of the finest subjects of investigation, only explains itself by the conviction, that if the power of Spain had not been broken by the heroism of the Calvinistic spirit, the history of the Netherlands, of Europe and of the world would have been as painfully sad and dark as now, thanks to Calvinism, it is bright and inspiring. Professor Fruin rightly remarks that: "In Switzerland, in France, in the Netherlands, in Scotland and in England, and wherever Protestantism has had to establish itself at the point of the sword, it was Calvinism that gained the day."

Call to mind that this turn in the history of the world could not have been brought about except by the implanting of another principle in the human heart, and by the disclosing of another world of thought to the human mind; that only by Calvinism the psalm of liberty found its way from the troubled conscience to the lips; that Calvinism has captured and guaranteed to us our constitutional civil rights; and that simultaneously with this there went out from Western Europe that mighty movement which promoted the revival of science and art, opened new avenues to commerce and trade, beautified domestic and social life, exalted the middle classes to positions of honor, caused philanthropy to abound, and more than all this, elevated, purified and ennobled moral life by puritanic seriousness, and then judge for yourselves whether it will do to banish any longer this God-given Calvinism to the archives of history, and whether it is so much of a dream to conceive that Calvinism has yet a blessing to bring and a bright hope to unveil for the future.

You know what has taken place in Southern-Africa these last twenty years. The struggle of the Boers in the Trans-



vaal against Albion's superior powers must often have reminded you of your own past. In what was achieved at Majuba or at the Spitskop, and recently in the invasion of Dr. Jameson by Kruger and his handful of faithful followers the heroism of old Calvinism was again brilliantly evident. If Calvinism had not been passed on from our fathers to the Boers, their blood would not have been so heroically shed, and no free republic would have arisen in the South of the Dark Continent. This proves that Calvinism is not dead—that it still carries in its germ the vital energy of the days of its former glory. Even as a grain of wheat from the Sarcophagi of the Pharoahs, when again committed to the soil, bears fruit a hundredfold, so Calvinism still carries in itself a wondrous power for the future of the nations. What has been achieved in South Africa by the Boers, we Christians of both Continents should achieve in our still holier struggle for Christianity, marching under the banner of the Cross against the spirit of the times. And for this purpose, of all Protestant tendencies Calvinism alone arms us with an inflexible principle, by the strength of that principle guaranteeing us a sure, though far from easy victory.





Transcribed by Dr. A. C. Harper, 1892

## SECOND LECTURE.

### CALVINISM AND RELIGION.

The conclusion arrived at in my first Lecture, was first, that, scientifically speaking, Calvinism means the completed evolution of Protestantism, resulting in a both higher and richer stage of human development. Further, that the world-view of Modernism, with its starting-point in the French Revolution, can claim no higher privilege than that of presenting an atheistic caricature of the brilliant ideal proclaimed by Calvinism, therefore being unqualified for the honor of leading us higher on. And, lastly, that whosoever rejects atheism, or to speak still more boldly, refuses to accept antitheism, as his fundamental thought, is bound to go back to Calvinism, not to repristinate it in its worn-out form, but once more to catch hold of the Calvinistic principles, in order to embody them in such a form as, suiting the requirements of our own century, may restore the needed unity to Protestant thought and the lacking energy to Protestant practical life.

In my present Lecture, therefore, treating of *Calvinism and Religion*, first of all I will try to illustrate the dominant position occupied by Calvinism in the central domain of our worship of the Most High. The fact that, in the



religious domain, Calvinism *has* occupied from the first a peculiar and impressive position, nobody will deny. As if by one magical stroke, it created its own Confession, its own Theology, its own Church Organisation, its own Church Discipline, its own Cultus, and its own Moral Praxis. And continued historical investigation proves with increasing certainty that all these new Calvinistic forms for our religious life were the logical product of its one fundamental thought and the embodiment of one and the same principle. Measure the energy which Calvinism here displayed by the utter incapability Modernism evinced in the same domain by the absolute fruitlessness of its endeavours. Ever since it entered its "mystical" period, Modernism also, both in Europe and in America, has acknowledged the necessity of carving out a new form for the religious life of our time. Hardly a century after the once glittering tinsel of Rationalism, now that Materialism is sounding its retreat in the ranks of science, a kind of hollow piety is again exercising its enticing charms, and every day it is becoming more fashionable to take a plunge into the warm stream of mysticism. With an almost sensual delight this modern mysticism quaffs its intoxicating draught from the nectar-cup of some intangible infinite. It was even purposed that, on the ruins of the once so stately Puritanic building, a new religion, with a new ritual should be inaugurated, as a higher evolution of religious life. Already, for more than a quarter of a century, the dedication and solemn opening of this new sanctuary has been promised us. And yet it has all led to nothing. No tangible effect has been produced. No formative principle has emerged from the imbroglia of hypotheses. Not even the beginning of an associative movement is as yet perceptible, and the long looked for plant has not even lifted its head above the barren soil.—Now, in contraposition to this, look at the giant spirit of Calvin, who, in the sixteenth century, with one master stroke, placed before the gaze of the



astonished world an entire religious edifice, erected in the purest Scriptural style. So rapidly was the whole building completed that most of the spectators forgot to pay attention to the wonderful structure of the foundations. In all that the religious modern thought has, I will not say created, as with a master hand, but heaped together, like an unsuccessful amateur,—not one nation, not one family, hardly one solitary soul has (to use Augustine's words), ever found the *requiescat* for his "broken heart," while the Reformer of Geneva, by his mighty spiritual energy, unto five nations at once, both then, and after the lapse of three centuries, has afforded guidance in life, uplifting of the heart unto the Father of Spirits, and holy peace, for ever. This naturally leads to the question—what was the secret of this wonderful energy? Allow me to present the answer to this question,—first in *Religion as such*, next in religion as manifested in the *Life of the Church*, and lastly in the fruit of Religion for *Practical Life*.

---

First, then, we must consider *Religion as such*. Here four mutually dependent fundamental questions arise:—(1) Does Religion exist for the sake of *God*, or for *Man*? (2) Must it operate *directly* or *mediately*? (3) Can it remain *partial* in its operations or has it to embrace the *whole* of our personal being and existence? and, (4) Can it bear a *normal*, or must it reveal an *exceptional*, *i.e.* a soteriological character? To these four questions Calvinism answers: (1) Man's religion ought to be not egotistical, and for *man*, but ideal, for the sake of *God*. (2) It has to operate not *mediately*, by human interposition but *directly*, from the heart. (3) It may not remain *partial*, as running alongside of life, but must lay hold upon our *whole* existence. And (4) Its character should be soteriological, *i.e.*, it should spring, not from our *fallen* and therefore *abnormal* nature, but from the *new man*, re-



stored by palingenesis to his original standard. Allow we then successively to elucidate each of these four points.

Modern religious philosophy ascribes the origin of religion to a potency, from which it could not originate, but which acted merely, as its supporter and preserver. It has mistaken the dead prop of the living shoot for the living shoot itself. Attention is called, and very properly, to the contrast between man, and the overwhelming power of the cosmos which surrounds him, and now religion is introduced as a mystical energy, trying to strengthen him against this immense power of the cosmos which inspires him with such deadly fear. Being conscious of the dominion which his own unseen soul exercises over his tangible body, he infers quite naturally, that Nature, also, must be moved by the impulse of some hidden spiritual being. Animistically, therefore, he first explains the movements of nature as the result of an indwelling army of spirits, and tries to catch them to conjure them, to bend them to his advantage. Then, rising from this atomistic idea to a more monistic conception, he begins to believe in the existence of personal gods,—first in the sense of a disorderly host of unconnected beings, but soon concentrated hierarchically, under some supreme Being,—expecting from these divine beings, who stand above nature, effectual assistance against the fiendish power of Nature. And finally, grasping the contrast between the spiritual and the material, he pays homage to the Primative and Supreme Spirit, as standing over against all that is visible, till, in the end, having abandoned his faith in such an extramundane Spirit, as a personal being, and charmed by the loftiness of his own human spirit, he prostrates himself before some impersonal ideal of which in self-adoration, he deems himself to be the worshipful bearer. But whatever may be the various stages in the progress of this egoistic religion, it never overcomes its subjective





character, remaining always a religion *for the sake of man*. Men are religious in order to conjure the spirits hovering behind the veil of Nature, to free themselves from the oppressive sway of the cosmos, or to raise themselves above all that is visible, in the consciousness of their spiritual superiority. It matters not whether the Llama priest confines the evil spirits in his jugs, whether the nature-gods of the Orient are invoked to find shelter against the forces of nature, whether the loftier gods of Greece are worshipped in their ascendancy above nature, or whether, finally, idealistic philosophy presents the spirit of man himself as the real object of adoration;—in all these different forms it is and remains a religion fostered for man's sake, aiming at his safety, his liberty, his elevation, and partly also at his triumph over death. And even when a religion of this kind has developed itself into monotheism, the god whom it worships remains invariably a god who exists in order to help man, in order to secure good order and tranquillity for the State, to furnish assistance and deliverance in time of need, or to strengthen the nobler and higher impulse of the human heart in its ceaseless struggle with the degrading influences of sin. The consequence of this is that all such religion thrives in time of famine and pestilence, it flourishes among the poor and oppressed, and it expands among the humble and the feeble; but it pines away in the days of prosperity, it fails to attract the well-to-do, it is abandoned by those who are more highly cultured. As soon as the more civilized classes enjoy tranquillity and comfort, and by the progress of science feel more and more delivered from the pressure of the cosmos, they throw away the crutches of religion, and with a sneer at everything holy, go stumbling forward on their own poor legs. This is the fatal end of egoistic religion;—it becomes superfluous and disappears as soon as the egoistic interests are satisfied. This was the course of religion among all non-Christian nations, in earlier times, and the



same phenomenon is repeating itself in our own century, among nominal Christians of the higher, more prosperous and more cultured classes of society. On the continent of Europe at least, the modern and civilized middle classes deem themselves to have outgrown all religion.

Now the position of Calvinism is diametrically opposed to all this. It does not deny that religion has also its human and subjective side;—it does not dispute the fact that religion is promoted, encouraged and strengthened by our disposition to seek help in time of need and spiritual elevation in the face of sensual passions; but it maintains that it reverses the proper order of things to seek, in these accidental motives, the essence and the very purpose of religion. The Calvinist values all of these as *fruits* which are produced by religion, and as props which give it support, but he refuses to honour them as the reason of its existence. Of course, religion, as such, produces *also* a blessing for man, but it does not exist for the sake of man;—it exists for the sake of God. It is not God who exists for the sake of His Creation;—the Creation exists for the sake of God. For, as the Scripture says, He has created all things for Himself.

For this reason God Even impressed a religious expression on the whole of unconscious nature,—on plants, on animals and also on children. “The whole earth is full of His glory.” “How excellent is Thy Name oh God, in all the earth.” “The Heavens declare the glory of God and the firmament sheweth His handiwork.” “Out of the mouths of babes and sucklings Thou hast ordained praise.” Frost and hail, snow and vapour, the abyss and the hurricane,—everything must praise God. But just as the entire creation reaches its culminating point in man, so also religion finds its clear expression only in man who is made in the image of God, and this not because man seeks it, but because God Himself increated in man’s nature the real essential religious expression, by means of the seed of religion, as Calvin defines it, sown in our human heart.



God Himself *makes* man religious by means of the *sensus divinitatis* i.e. the sense of the Divine, which He causes to strike the chords on the harp of his soul. A sound of need interrupts the pure harmony of this divine melody, but only in consequence of sin. In its original form, in its natural condition, religion is exclusively a sentiment of admiration and adoration, which elevates and unites, not a feeling of dependence which severs and depresses. Just as the anthem of the Seraphim around the throne is one uninterrupted cry of "*Holy,—Holy,—Holy*"! so also the religion of man upon this earth should consist in one echoing of God's glory, as our Creator and Inspirer. The starting-point of every motive in religion is God and not Man. Man is the instrument and means, God alone is here the goal, the point of departure and the point of arrival, the fountain, from which the waters flow, and at the same time, the ocean into which they finally return. To be irreligious is to forsake the highest aim of our existence, and on the other hand to covet no other existence than for the sake of God, to long for nothing but for the will of God, and to be wholly absorbed in the glory of the name of the Lord, such is the pith and kernel of all true religion. "Hallowed be thy Name. Thy kingdom come. Thy Will be done." is the threefold petition which gives utterance to all true religion. Our watchword must be.—"Seek first the kingdom of God," and after that think of your own need. First stands the confession of the absolute sovereignty of the Triune God; for of Him, through Him, and unto Him are all things. And therefore in prayer remains the deepest expression of all religious life. This is the fundamental conception of religion as maintained by Calvinism, and hitherto, no one has ever found a higher conception. For no higher conception can be found. The fundamental thought of Calvinism, at the same time the fundamental thought of the Bible, and of Christianity itself, leads, in the domain of religion to the realization of the highest





ideal. Nor has the philosophy of religion in our own century, in its most daring flights, ever attained a higher point of view nor a more ideal conception.

---

The second principal question in all religion is whether it must be *direct*, or *mediate*. Must there stand a church, a priest, or, as of old, a sorcerer, a dispenser of sacred mysteries, between God and the soul, or shall all intervening links be cast away, so that the bond of religion shall bind the soul directly to God. Now we find that in all non-Christian religions, without any exception, human intercessors are deemed necessary, and in the domain of Christianity itself the intercessor intruded again upon the scene, in the saints of the cloisters, in the Blessed Virgin, in the host of angels, and in the priestly hierarchy of the clergy; and although Luther took the field against all priestly mediation, yet the church which is called by his name, renewed by its title of "*ecclesia docens*" the office of mediator and steward of mysteries. On this point also it was Calvin, and he alone, who attained to the full realization of the ideal of pure religion. Religion as he conceived it must "*nullis mediis interpositis*", i.e. without any creaturely intercession realize the direct communion between God and the human heart. Not because of any hatred against priests, as such, not because of any undervaluing of the saints, nor underestimating the significance of angels, but solely because Calvin felt bound to vindicate the essence of religion and the glory of God in that essence, and absolutely devoid of all yielding or wavering, he waged war, with holy indignation, against everything that interposed itself between the Soul and God. Of course he clearly perceived that in order to be fitted for the true religion, fallen man needs a Mediator, but such a mediator could not be found in any fellow-man. Only the God-man,—only God Himself could be such a mediator. And this mediatorship could be con-



firmed not by us, but only from the side of God, by the indwelling of God the Holy Spirit in the heart of the regenerated. In all religion God Himself must be the active power. He must *make* us religious, He must give us the religious disposition, nothing being left to us but the power to give form and expression to the deep religious sentiment which He, Himself, stirred in the depth of our heart. There we see the mistake of those who regarded Calvin as only an *Augustinus redivivus*. Notwithstanding his sublime confession of God's holy grace, Augustine remained *the Bishop*. He kept his position between the Triune God and the layman. And although prominent among the most pious men of his time, he had so little insight into the real claims of thorough-going religion on behalf of laymen that in his dogmatics he lauds the church as the mystical Purveyor, into whose bosom God caused all grace to flow and from whose treasure all men had to accept it. Only he, therefore, who superficially confines his attention to predestination can confuse Augustinianism and Calvinism. Religion *for the sake of man* carries with it the position that man has to act as a mediator for his fellow-man. Religion *for the sake of God* inexorably excludes every human mediatorship. As long as it remains the chief purpose of religion to help man, and as long as man is understood to deserve grace by his devotion, it is perfectly natural that the man of inferior piety should invoke the mediation of the holier man. Another must procure for him what he cannot procure for himself. The fruit on the branches hangs too high, and, therefore, the higher-reaching man has to pluck it, and hand it down to his helpless comrade. If, on the contrary, the demand of religion is that *every* human heart must give glory to God, no man can appear before God on behalf of another. Then every single human being must appear personally, for himself, and religion achieves its aim only in the *general priesthood of believers*. Even the new-born babe must have received the seed of



religion from God Himself; and in case it dies without being baptized, it must not be sent off to a *limbus innocentium*, but, if elected, enter, even as the long-lived, into personal communion with God, for all eternity.

The importance of this second point, in the question of religion, culminating, as it does, in the confession of personal election, is incalculable. On the one hand, all religion must tend *to make man free*, that by a clear utterance he may express that general religious impression stamped, by God Himself, upon unconscious nature. On the other hand, every appearance of an interposing priest or enchanter in the domain of religion fetters the human spirit, in a chain which presses the more woefully the more the piety increases in fervor. In the Church of Rome, even at the present day, the *bons catholiques* are most closely confined in the fetters of the clerus. Only the Catholic whose piety has decreased, is able to secure for himself a partial liberty by loosening more than half-way, the tie which connects him with his church. In the Lutheran churches the clerical fetters are less confining, yet far from being loosened, entirely. And only in churches which take their stand in Calvinism, do we find that spiritual independence which enables the believer to oppose, if need be, and for God's sake, even the most powerful office-bearer in his church. Only he who personally stands before God on his own account, and enjoys an uninterrupted communion with God, can properly display the glorious wings of liberty. And both in Holland and in France, in England as well as in America, the historic result affords most undeniable evidence of the fact that despotism has found no more invincible antagonist, and liberty of conscience no braver, no more resolute champions than the followers of Calvin. In the last analysis, the cause of this phenomenon lies in the fact that the effect of every clerical interposition invariably was, and must be, to make religion external and to smother it with sacerdotal forms. Only where all priestly



intervention disappears, where God's sovereign election binds the inward soul directly to God Himself, and the ray of divine light enters straightway into the depth of our heart, only there does religion, in its most absolute sense, gain its ideal realization.

This leads me, naturally, to the third religious question: Is religion *partial*, or is it all-subduing, and comprehensive,—*universal* in the strict sense of the word? Now, if the aim of religion is found in man himself and its realization is made dependent on clerical mediators, religion cannot be but *partial*. In that case it follows logically that every man confines his religion to those occurrences of his life by which his religious needs are stirred, and to those cases in which he finds human intervention at his disposal. The partial character of this sort of religion shows itself in three particulars: in the religious *organ* through which, in the *sphere* in which, and in the *group of persons* among which religion thrives and flourishes.

Recent controversy affords a pertinent illustration of the first limitation. The wise men of our generation maintain that religion has to retire from the precinct of the human intellect. It must seek to express itself either by means of the mystical feelings, or else by means of the practical will. Mystical and ethical inclinations are hailed with enthusiasm, in the domain of religion, but in that same domain the intellect, as leading to metaphysical hallucinations must be muzzled. Metaphysics and Dogmatics are increasingly tabooed, and Agnosticism is ever more loudly acclaimed as the solution of the great enigma. On the rivers of sentiment and of feeling, navigation is made duty-free; and ethical activity is becoming the only touch-stone for testing the religious gold; but Metaphysics are avoided as drowning us in a swamp. Whatsoever announces itself with the pretension of an axiomatic dogma,





is rejected as irreligious contraband. And although that same Christ Whom these very scholars honour as a religious genius has taught us most emphatically: "Thou shalt love God, not only with all thy heart and with all thy strength, but also *with all thy mind*", yet they, on the contrary, venture to dismiss our mind, or intellect, as unfit for use, in this holy domain, and as not fulfilling the requirements of a religious organ. Thus the religious organ being found, not in the whole of our being, but partially, being confined to our feelings and our will, consequently also *the sphere* of religious life must assume the same *partial character*. Religion was excluded from science, and its authority from the domain of public life; henceforth the inner chamber, the cell for prayer, and the secrecy of the heart should be its exclusive dwelling place. By his *du sollst*, Kant limited the sphere of religion to the ethical life. The mystics of our own times banish religion to the retreats of sentiment, and the result is that, in many different ways, religion, once the central force of human life, is now placed alongside of it, and far from the thriving of the world, is understood to hide itself in a distant and almost private retreat.

This brings us naturally to the third characteristic note of this partial view of religion;—religion as pertaining not to all, but only to *the group of pious people* among our generation. Thus the limitation of the *organ* of religion brings about the limitation of its *sphere*, and the limitation of its sphere consequently brings about the limitation of its group or *circle* among men. Just as art is understood to have an *organ* of its own, a *sphere* of its own, and therefore, also, its own *circle* of devotees, so also, according to this view, must it be with religion. It so happens that the great bulk of the people are almost devoid of mystical feeling, and energetic strength of will. For this reason they have either no perception of the glow of mysticism, or are incapable of really pious deeds. But there are also those whose inner life is overflowing with a sense of the Infinite, or who



are full of holy energy, and among such it is that piety and religion flourish most brilliantly both in their imaginative power, and in their realizing capability. — From a quite different standpoint, Rome gradually and increasingly came to favour the same partial views. She knew religion only as it existed in her own church, and considered the influence of religion to be confined to that portion of life which she had consecrated. I fully acknowledge that she tried to draw all human life as far as possible into the holy sphere, but everything outside this sphere, everything not touched by baptism, nor aspersed by her holy water, was devoid of all genuine religious efficiency. And just as Rome drew a boundary line between the consecrated and the profane sides of life, she also subdivided her own sacred precincts according to different degrees of religious intensity;—the clergy and the cloisters constituting the *Holy of Holies*, the pious laity forming the *Holy Place*, thus leaving the *Outer Court* to those who, although baptized, continued to prefer to church-devotion the often sinful pleasures of the world;—a system of limitation and division, which for those in the *Outer Court*, ended in setting nine tenths of practical life outside of all religion. So religion was made partial, by carrying it from ordinary days to days of festival, from days of prosperity to times of danger and sickness, and from the fulness of life to the time of approaching death. A dualistic system which has found its most emphatic expression in the praxis of the Carnival, giving Religion a full sway over the soul during the weeks of Lent, but leaving to the flesh a fair chance, before descending into this vale of gloom, to empty to the dregs the full cup of pleasure, if not of mirth and folly.

Now this whole view of the matter is squarely antagonized by Calvinism, which vindicates for religion its full universal character, and its complete universal application. If everything that is exists for the sake of God, then it follows that the whole creation must give glory to God. The sun,



moon, and stars in the firmament, the birds of the air, the whole of Nature around us, but, above all, man himself, who, priestlike, must consecrate to God the whole of creation, and all life thriving in it. And although sin has deadened a large part of creation to the glory of God, the demand,—the ideal—remains unchangeable, that *every* creature must be immersed in the stream of religion, and end by lying as a religious offering on the altar of the Almighty. A religion confined to feeling or will is therefore unthinkable to the Calvinist. The sacred anointing of the priest of creation must reach down to his beard and to the hem of his garment. His whole being, including all his abilities and powers, must be pervaded by the *sensus divinitatis*, and how then could he exclude his rational consciousness,—the *λόγος* which is in him,—the light of thought which comes from God Himself to irradiate him? To possess his God for the underground world of his feelings, and in the outworks of the exertion of his will, but not in his inner self, in the very centre of his consciousness, and his thought:—to have fixed starting-points for the study of nature and axiomatic strongholds for practical life, but to have no fixed support in his thoughts about the Creator Himself, all of this was, for the Calvinist, the very denying of the Eternal Logos. The same character of universality was claimed by the Calvinist for the *sphere* of religion and its *circle* of influence among men. Everything that has been created was, in its creation, furnished by God with an unchangeable law of its existence. And because God has fully ordained such laws and ordinances for all life, therefore He demands that all life be consecrated to His service, in strict obedience. A religion confined to the closet, the cell, or the Church, therefore, Calvin, and with him every Calvinist, abhors. With the Psalmist, he calls upon heaven and earth, he calls upon all peoples and nations to give glory to God. God is present in all life, with the influence of His omnipresent and almighty power, and no sphere of human





life is conceivable in which religion does not maintain its demands that God shall be praised, that God's ordinances shall be observed, and that every *labora* shall be permeated with its *ora* in fervent and ceaseless prayer. Wherever man may stand, whatever he may do, to whatever he may apply his hand, in agriculture, in commerce, and in industry, or his mind, in the world of art, and science, he is, in whatsoever it may be, constantly standing before the face of his God, he is employed in the service of his God, he has strictly to obey his God, and above all, he has to aim at the glory of his God. Consequently, it is impossible for a Calvinist to confine religion to a single group, or to some circles among men. Religion concerns the whole of our human race. This race is the product of God's creation. It is His wonderful workmanship, His absolute possession. Therefore the whole of mankind must be imbued with the fear of God,—old as well as young,—low as well as high,—not only those who have become initiated into His mysteries, but also those who still stand afar off. For not only did God create all men, not only is He all for all men, but His grace also extends itself, not only as a special grace, to the Elect, but also as a common grace (*gratia communis*), to all mankind. To be sure there is a concentration of religious light and life in the Church, but then in the walls of this church, there are wide open windows, and through these spacious windows the light of the Eternal radiates over the whole world. Here is a city, set upon a hill, which every man can see afar off.—Here is a holy salt that penetrates in every direction, checking all corruption. And even he who does not yet imbibe the higher light, or maybe shuts his eyes to it, is nevertheless admonished, with equal emphasis, and in all things, to give glory to the name of the Lord. All partial religion drives the wedge of dualism into life, but the true Calvinist never forsakes the standard of religious monism. One supreme calling must impress the stamp of one-ness upon all human life, because one God upholds and preserves it,



just as He created it all. Yea, even sin, the utter and absolute reverse of religion, cannot be excluded from the monism of His Providence. The *ego* of God sets the creation as the *non-ego* over against Him, and when this *non-ego*, in the case of man, developes into a *contra-ego* it will be found that, in the gloomy way of sin and misery, even the painful severance from God shall kindle the most ardent longing for His renewed Communion.

— — — — —

This brings us, without any further transition, to our fourth main question, *viz.*, Must religion be *normal*, or *soteriological*? I am aware that the *nomistic* conception of religion is usually considered as the opposite of the *soteriological*, but this latter distinction belongs to another order of conceptions. The distinction which I have in mind here is concerned with the question whether in the matter of religion we must reckon *de facto* with man in his present condition as *normal*, or as having fallen into sin, and having therefore become *abnormal*. In the latter case religion must necessarily assume a soteriological character. Now the prevailing idea, at present, favours the view that religion has to start from man as being normal. Not of course as though our race as a whole should conform already to the highest religious norm. *This* nobody affirms. Everyone knows better than to make such an absurd statement. As a matter of fact, we meet with much irreligiousness, and imperfect religious development continues to be the rule. But precisely in this slow and gradual progress from the lowest forms to the highest ideals, the development demanded by this normal view of religion contends that it has found confirmation. According to this view, the first traces of religion are found in animals. They are seen in the dog who adores his master, and as the *homo sapiens* developes out of the Chimpanzee, so religion only enters upon a higher stage. Since that time religion has passed through all the notes



of the gamut. At present it is engaged in loosening itself from the bands of Church and dogma, to pass on to what is again considered a higher stage, namely, *the unconscious feeling for the Unknown Infinite*.—This whole theory is opposed by that other and entirely different theory, which, without denying the preformation of so much that is human, in the animal, or the fact that (if you will allow me to say so) animals were created after the image of man, just as man was created after the image of God, nevertheless maintains that the first man was created in perfect relations to his God, *i.e.* as imbued by a pure and genuine religion, and consequently explains the many low, imperfect and absurd forms of religion found in Paganism, not as the result of his creation but as the result of his Fall. These low and imperfect forms of religion their second theory understands not as a process that leads from a lower to a higher, but as a lamentable degeneration,—a degeneration, which, in the nature of the case, makes the restoration of the true religion possible only in the soteriological way. Now in the choice between these two theories Calvinism allows no hesitation. Standing himself, with this question, too, before the face of God, the Calvinist is so impressed with the holiness of God that the consciousness of guilt immediately lacerates his soul, and the terrible nature of sin presses on his heart as with an intolerable weight. Every attempt to explain sin, as an incomplete stage on the way to perfection, arouses his wrath, as an insult to the majesty of God. He confessed, from the beginning, the same truth which Buckle has demonstrated empirically in his “History of Civilization in England”, *viz.* that the *forms* in which sin makes its appearance may show us a gradual refinement but the moral condition of the human heart, as such, has remained the same throughout all the centuries. To the *de profundis* with which, thirty centuries ago, the soul of David cried unto God, the troubled soul of every child of God in the



sixteenth century still sounded a response with undiminished power. The conception of the corruption of sin as the source of all human misery was nowhere more profound than in Calvin's environment. Even in the assertions which the Calvinist made, in accordance with Holy Scripture, concerning Hell and damnation, there is no coarseness, no rudeness, but only that clearness which is the result of the utmost seriousness of life, and the undaunted courage of a deeprooted conviction of the holiness of the most High. Did not He, from Whose lips flowed the most tender, and the most winning words,—did not He, Himself also speak most decidedly and repeatedly of an "outer darkness", of a "fire that cannot be quenched", of a "worm that dieth not"? And in this, also, Calvin was right, for to refuse to assent to these words is nothing but a lack of thoroughgoing consistency. It shews a want of sincerity in our confession of the holiness of God, and of the destructive power of sin. And on the contrary, in this spiritual experience of sin, in this empirical consideration of the misery of life, in this lofty impression of the holiness of God, and in this staunchness of his convictions, which led him to follow his conclusions to the bitter end, the Calvinist found the roots of the necessity first of *regeneration*, for real *existence*, and secondly, the necessity of *Revelation* for clear *consciousness*. Now my subject does not induce me to speak in detail of regeneration. as that immediate act by which God, as it were, sets right again the crooked wheel of life. But it is necessary that I say a few words concerning Revelation, and the authority of the Holy Scriptures. Very improperly, the Scriptures have been represented, by Schweizer and others, as only the formal principle of the Reformed confession. The conception of genuine Calvinism lies much deeper. The meaning of Calvin was expressed in what he called the *necessitas S. Scripturae*; i. e. the need of Scriptural revelation. This *necessitas S. S.* was for Calvin the unavoidable expression for the all-dominating authority of





the Holy Scriptures, and even now it is this very dogma which enables us to understand why it is that the Calvinist of to-day considers the critical analysis and the application of the critical solvent to the Scriptures as tantamount to an abandoning of Christianity itself. In Paradise, before the Fall, there was no Bible, and there will be no Bible in the future Paradise of glory. When the transparent light, kindled by Nature, addresses us directly, and the inner word of God sounds in our heart in its original clearness, and all human words are sincere, and the function of our inner ear is perfectly performed, why should we need a Bible? What Mother loses herself in a treatise upon the "love of our children" the very moment that her own dear ones are playing about her knee, and God allows her to drink in their love with full draughts? But, in our present condition, this immediate communion with God by means of nature, and of our own heart is lost. Sin brought separation instead, and the opposition which is manifest nowadays, against the authority of the Holy Scriptures is based on nothing else than the false supposition that, our condition being still normal, our religion need not be soteriological. For of course, in that case, the Bible is not wanted, it becomes, indeed, a hindrance, and grates upon your feelings, since it intercedes a book between God and your heart. For what husband corresponds with his wife by writ, while she is sitting at the family table, beside him? Oral communication excludes writing. But like the ocean, the current of religion has its periods of high tide and low tide; and in our days this tide is low, just as, in the days of our fathers it was high. Hence it is that the sense of sin is so feeble in our hearts, and that conditions which, in times of great religious activity, every pious man felt as abnormal, and degenerate, are now considered normal and proper. When the sun shines in your house, bright and clear, you turn off the electric light, but when the sun disappears, below



the horizon, you feel the *necessitas luminis artificiosi*, and the artificial light is kindled in every dwelling. Now this is the case in matters of religion. When there are no mists to hide the majesty of the divine light from our eyes, what need is there then for a lamp unto the feet, or a light upon the path? But when history, experience and consciousness all unite in stating the fact that the light of Heaven *has* disappeared, and that we are groping about in the dark, then, a different, or if you will, an artificial light *must* be kindled for us;—and such a light God has kindled for us in His Holy Word.

For the Calvinist, therefore, the necessity of the Holy Scriptures does not rest in ratiocination, but on the immediate testimony of the Holy Spirit,—on the *testimonium spiritus Sancti*. His insight into inspiration is the product of historical deduction, and so is also every canonical declaration of the Scriptures. But the magnetic power with which the Scripture influences his soul, and draws it to itself, just as the magnet draws the steel, is not derived, but immediate. All of this takes place in a manner, which, is not magical, nor unfathomably mystical, but clear, and easy to be understood. God regenerates us,—that is to say he rekindles in our heart the lamp sin had blown out. The necessary consequence of this regeneration is an irreconcilable conflict between the inner world of our heart and the world outside, and this conflict is ever the more intensified the more the regeneration principle pervades our consciousness. Now, in the Bible, God reveals, to the regenerate, a world of thought, a world of energies, a world of full and beautiful life, which stands in direct opposition to his ordinary world, but which proves to agree in a wonderful way with the new life that has sprung up in his heart. So the regenerate begins to guess the identity of what is stirring in the depth of his own soul, and of what is revealed to him in Scripture, thereby learning both the inanity of the world around him, and the divine



reality of the world of the Scriptures, and as soon as this has become a certainty to him, he has personally received the *testimony* of the *Holy Spirit*. Everything that is in him thirsted for the Father of all Lights and Spirits. Outside the Scripture, he discovered only vague shadows. But now as he looks upward, through the prism of the Scriptures, he rediscovers his Father and his God. For this reason he puts no shackles on science. If a man wants to criticize,—let him criticize. Such criticism even holds the promise that it will deepen our own insight into the structure of the scriptural edifice. Only no Calvinist ever allows the critic to dash out of his hand, for a moment, the prism itself which broke up the divine ray of light into its brilliant tints and colours. No appeal to the grace bestowed inwardly, no pointing to the fruits of the Holy Ghost, can enable him to dispense with the *necessitas* which the soteriological standpoint of religion among sinners carries with it. As mere *entities* we share our life with plants and animals. Unconscious life we share with the children, and with the sleeping man, and even with the man who has lost his reason. That which distinguishes us, as higher beings, and as wide awake men is our *full self-consciousness*, and therefore, if religion, as the highest vital function, is to operate also in that highest sphere of self-consciousness, it must follow that soteriological religion next to the *necessitas* of inward *palingenesis* demands also the *necessitas* of an assistant light of revelation to be kindled in our twilight. And this assistant light, coming from God Himself, but handed to us by human agency, beams upon us in His holy Word.

Summing up the results of our investigations thus far, I may express my conclusion as follows. In each one of the four great problems of religion, Calvinism has expressed its conviction in an appropriate dogma, and each time has made that choice which even now, after three centuries, satisfies the most ideal wants, and leaves the way open





for an ever richer development. First, it regards religion, not in an utilitarian, or eudaimonistic sense, as existing for the sake of man, but for God, and for God alone. This is its dogma of *God's sovereignty*. Secondly In religion there must be no intermediation of any creature between God and the soul;—all religion is the immediate work of God Himself, in the inner heart. This is the doctrine of *Election*. Thirdly, religion is not partial but universal;—this is the dogma of *common or universal grace*. And, finally, in our sinful condition, religion cannot be normal, but has to be *soteriological*;—this is its position in the twofold dogma of the necessity of regeneration, and of the *necessitas S. Scripturae*.

---

Having considered Religion as such, and coming now *to the Church*, as its organized form, or its phenomenal appearance, I shall present, in successive stages, the Calvinistic conception of the *essence*, the *manifestation* and the *purpose* of the Church of Christ upon earth.

In its essence, for the Calvinist, the Church is a spiritual organism, including Heaven and earth, but having at present, its centre, and the starting-point for its action, not upon earth, but in Heaven. This is thus to be understood: God created the Cosmos geocentrically, i. e. He placed the spiritual centre of this Cosmos on our planet, and caused all the divisions of the kingdom of nature, on this earth, to culminate in man, upon whom, as the bearer of His image He called to consecrate the Cosmos to His glory. In God's creation, therefore, man stands as the prophet priest and king, and although sin has disturbed these high designs, yet God pushes them onward. He so loves His world that He has given Himself to it, in the person of His Son, and thus He has again brought our race and through our race, His whole Cosmos, into a renewed contact with eternal life. To be sure, many



branches and leaves off the tree of the human race shall fall away, yet the tree itself shall be saved; on its new root in Christ, it shall once more blossom gloriously. For regeneration does not save a few isolated individuals, finally to be joined together mechanically as an aggregate heap; Regeneration saves the organism, itself, of our race. And therefore all regenerate human life, forms one organic body, of which Christ is the Head, and whose members are bound together by their mystical union with Him. But not before the Parousia, shall this new all-embracing organism manifest itself as the centre of the cosmos; at present it is hidden. Here, on earth it is only as it were its silhouet that can be dimly discerned. In the Future, *this new Jerusalem* shall descend from God, out of Heaven, but at present it withdraws its beams from our sight in the mysteries of the invisible. And therefore the true sanctuary is now *above*;—on high are both the Altar of Atonement, and the incense Altar of Prayer; and on high is Christ, as the only priest who, according to Melchizedek's ordinance, ministers at the Altar, in the sanctuary, before God.

Now, in the middle ages, the Church had more and more lost sight of this heavenly spiritual character;—she had become worldly in her nature. The Sanctuary was again brought back to earth, the Altar was rebuilt of stone, and a priestly hierarchy had reconstituted itself for the ministrations of the Altar. Next of course it was necessary also to renew the tangible sacrifice on earth, and this at last brought the church to invent the unbloody offering of the Mass. Now against all this, Calvinism opposed itself, not to contend against priesthood on principle, or against altars as such, or against sacrifice in itself, because the office of priest cannot perish, and everyone knowing the fact of sin realizes in his own heart, the absolute need of a propitiatory sacrifice, but in order to do away with all this worldly paraphernalia, and to call believers to lift up their eyes again, on high, to the real sanctuary, where



Christ, our only priest, ministers at the only real altar. The battle was waged, not against the *sacerdotium*, but against the *sacerdotalism*, and Calvin alone fought this battle through to the end, with thorough consistency. Lutherans and Episcopalians *rebuilt* a kind of altar, on earth; Calvinism alone dared to put it away, entirely. Consequently, among the Episcopalians, the earthly priesthood was retained, even in the form of a hierarchy; in Lutheran lands the sovereign became *summus episcopus* and the divisions of ecclesiastical ranks were maintained; but Calvinism proclaimed the absolute equality of all who engaged in the service of the church, and refused to ascribe to its leaders and officebearers any other character than that of *Ministers. (i.e. servants.)* That which, under the shadows of the Old Testament dispensation, furnished prophetic and visible instruction, now that the types were fulfilled, had become to Calvin, a detriment to the glory of Christ, and lowered the heavenly nature of the Church. Therefore, Calvinism could not rest until this worldly tinsel had ceased to charm and attract the eye. Only when the last grain of the sacerdotal leaven had been eliminated, could the Church on earth again become the outer court, from which believers could look up and onward to the real sanctuary of the living God.

The Westminster Confession beautifully sets forth this heavenly all-embracing nature of the Church, when it says:—"The Catholic or Universal Church, which is invisible, consists of the whole number of the elect that have been, are, or shall be, gathered into one, under Christ the Head, thereof; and is the spouse, the body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all." Only thus was the dogma of the invisible church religiously consecrated and apprehended in its cosmological, and enduring significance. For, of course, the reality and fulness of the Church of Christ cannot exist on earth. Here is found, at most, one generation of believers at a time, in the portal of the Temple;—all pre-



vious generations, from the beginning and foundation of the world, had left this earth, and had gone up on high. Therefore, those who remained here, were, *eo ipso*, *pilgrims*, meaning thereby that they were marching from the portal unto the Sanctuary itself, no possibility of salvation after death being left for those who had not been united to Christ, during this present life. No room could be left for masses for the dead, nor for a call to repentance on the other side of the grave, as German Theologians are now advocating. For all such processional, and gradual transitions, were regarded by Calvin as destroying the absolute contrast between the essence of the Church in Heaven, and its imperfect form, here on earth. The church on earth does not send up its light to Heaven, but the Church in Heaven must send its light down to the Church on earth. There is now, as it were, a curtain stretched, before the eye, which hinders it from penetrating while on earth, into the real essence of the Church. Therefore, all that remains possible to us on earth is first, a mystical communion with that real Church, by means of the Spirit, and in the second place the enjoyment of the shadows which are displaying themselves on the transparent curtain before us. Accordingly, no child of God should imagine that the real Church is here on earth, and that behind the curtain there is only an ideal product of our imagination; but, on the contrary, he has to confess that Christ in human form, in our flesh, has entered into the invisible, behind the curtain; and that, with Him, around Him, and in Him, our Head, is the real church, the real and essential sanctuary of our salvation.

---

After having thus clearly grasped the nature of the Church, in its bearing upon the re-creation both of our human race and of the Cosmos as a whole, let us now turn our attention to its *form of manifestation*, here on earth.





As such it displays, unto us, different *congregations of believers*, groups of *confessors*, living in some ecclesiastical union, in obedience to the ordinances of Christ Himself. The Church on earth is not an institution for the dispensation of grace, as if it were a dispensary of spiritual medicines. There is no mystical, spiritual order, gifted with mystical powers to operate with a magical influence upon laymen. There are only *regenerated and confessing individuals*, who, in accordance with the Scriptural command, and under the influence of the sociological element of all religion, have formed a society, and are endeavouring to live together in subordination to Christ as their king. This, alone, is the Church on earth,—not the building,—not the institution,—not a spiritual order. For Calvin, the Church is found in the *confessing individuals themselves*,—not in each individual separately, but in all of them taken together, and united, not as they themselves see fit, but according to the ordinances of Christ. In the church on earth, the universal priesthood of believers must be realized. Do not misunderstand me. I do not say: The Church consists of pious persons united in groups for religious purposes. That, in itself, would have nothing in common with the church. The real, heavenly, invisible church must manifest itself in the earthly church. If not, you will have a society, but no church. Now the real, essential church is and remains the body of Christ, of which regenerate persons are members. Therefore the Church on earth consists only of those who have been incorporated into Christ, who bow before Him, live in His Word, and adhere to His ordinances; and for this reason the church on earth has to preach the Word, administer the sacraments, and exercise discipline, and in everything to stand before the face of God.—This at the same time determines the form of government of this church on earth. This government, like the church itself, originates in Heaven, in Christ. *He* most effectually governs His church by means of the Holy Spirit, by whom He works in His members. Therefore, all being equal under



Him, there can be no distinctions of rank among believers; there are only ministers, who serve, lead and regulate; a thoroughly Presbyterian form of government; the Church power descending directly from Christ Himself, into the congregation, ascending from the congregation to the ministers, and by them being administered unto the brethren. So the sovereignty of Christ remains absolutely monarchical, but the government of the Church on earth becomes democratic to its bones and marrow; a system leading logically to this other sequence, that all believers and all congregations being of an equal standing, no Church may exercise any dominion over another, but that all Churches are of equal rank, and as manifestations of one and the same body, can only be united synodically, i. e. by way of *confederation*. Now let me draw your attention to another most important consequence of this same principle, *viz.* to the multiformity of denominations as the necessary result of the differentiation of the churches, according to the different degrees of their purity. If the church is considered to be an institute of grace, independent of the believers, or an institute in which a hierarchical priesthood distributes the treasury of grace entrusted to him, the result must be that this hierarchy extends itself through all nations and imparts the same stamp to all forms of ecclesiastical life. But if the church consists in the *congregation of believers*, if the churches are formed by the union of confessors, and are united only in the way of confederation, then the differences of climate and of nation, of historical past, and of disposition of mind come in to exercise a widely variegating influence, and multiformity in ecclesiastical matters must be the result. A result, therefore, of very far-reaching importance, because it annihilates the absolute character of every visible Church, and places them all side by side, as differing in degrees of purity, but always remaining manifestations of one holy and catholic church of Christ in Heaven. I do not say that Calvinistic



theologians have proclaimed this full consequence from the beginning. The desire for ruling power lurked also at the door of their heart, and even apart from this dangerous disposition it was right and natural for them theoretically to judge each church according to the standard of their own ideals. But this does not in the least detract from the great significance of the fact that by regarding the Church, not as a hierarchy or institution, but as the gathering of individual confessors, they started for the life of the church, as well as for the life of the state, and civil society, from the principle not of compulsion, but of liberty. For, of course by virtue of this starting-point there was no other church-power superior to the local churches, save only what the churches themselves constituted, by means of their confederation. Hence it followed of necessity that the natural and historic differences between men should also, wedgelike, force their way into the phenomenal life of the church upon earth. National differences of morals, differences of disposition and of emotions, different degrees in depth of life and insight, necessarily resulted in emphasizing first one, and then another side of the same truth. Hence the numerous sects and denominations into which the external church-life has fallen by virtue of this principle. So on our side there are denominations which may have departed from the rich deep and full Calvinistic Confession, in no small degree, even such as bitterly oppose more than one capital article of our confession; yet they all owe their origin to a deep-rooted opposition to sacerdotalism, and to the acknowledgment of the church as the "congregation of believers," the truth in which Calvinism expressed its fundamental conception. And although this fact unavoidably led to much unholy rivalry, and even to sinful errors of conduct; yet, after an experience of three centuries it must be confessed that this multiformity, which is inseparably connected with the fundamental thought of Calvinism, has been much more





favourable to the growth and prosperity of religious life than the compulsory uniformity in which Rome sought the very basis of its strength. And fruit is to be expected more abundantly still in the future, provided only that the principle of ecclesiastical liberty does not degenerate into indifference, and that no church, which, in its name and confession still upholds the Calvinistic banner, omits to fulfil its holy mission of recommending to others the superiority of its principles.

Still another point must be brought forward in this connection. The conception of the Church as the "congregation of believers" might lead to the conception that it included the believers only, without their children. This, however, is by no means the teaching of Calvinism; its teaching on the subject of infant baptism showing quite the contrary. Believers who meet together do not thereby sever the natural bond that binds them to their offspring. On the contrary, they consecrate this bond, and by baptism incorporate their children in the communion of their church, and these minors are kept in this Church communion until, when of age, they become themselves confessors, or sever themselves from the church by their unbelief. This is the so-important Calvinistic dogma of the *Covenant*; a prominent article of our confession, showing that the waters of the Church do not flow outside the natural stream of human life, but cause the life of the church to proceed hand in hand with the natural organic reproduction of succeeding generations. *Covenant* and Church are inseparable,—the covenant binding the church to the race, and God Himself sealing in it the connection between the life of grace, and the life of nature. Of course Church discipline must come in here, in order to preserve the purity of this Covenant as soon as the mutual permeating of grace by nature tends to lower the purity of the Church. From the Calvinistic viewpoint, therefore, it is impossible to speak of a national Church, as being destined to embrace all the inhabitants of the whole



country. A national Church, i.e. a church comprising only one nation, is a Heathen, or at most, a Jewish conception. The Church of Christ is not national but ecumenical. Not one single state, but the whole world is its domain. And when the Lutheran Reformers at the instigation of their sovereigns, nationalized their churches, and Calvinistic churches allowed themselves to deviate in the same track, they did not ascend to a higher conception than that of Rome's world-church, but descended to distinctly lower ground. Happily I may conclude by bearing witness that both the Synod of Dort, and the not less venerable Westminster Assembly, have honoured again the ecumenical character of our Reformed Churches, thereby censuring as unpardonable, every deviation from the only right principle.

---

Having thus far given an outline of the *nature* of the Church, and the *form* of its *manifestation*, let me now draw your attention in the last place to the *purpose* of its appearance on earth. I shall not say anything for the present on the separation of Church and state. This will naturally find place in the next Lecture. At present, I confine myself to the *purpose* that has been assigned to the Church in its pilgrimage through the world. That purpose cannot be human—egoistic, to prepare the believer for Heaven. A regenerate child, dying in the cradle, goes straight to Heaven, without any further preparation and wheresoever the Holy Ghost has kindled the spark of Eternal life in the soul, the perseverance of the saints assures the certainty of eternal salvation. Nay, upon earth also, the Church exists merely *for the sake of God*. Regeneration is sufficient for the elect man, to make him sure of his eternal destiny, but it is not enough to satisfy, the glory of God in His work among men. For the glory of our God it is necessary to have regeneration, followed by conversion, and to this conversion the Church must contribute,



by means of the preaching of the Word. In the regenerate man glows the spark, but only in the converted man does the spark burst into a blaze, and that blaze radiates the light from the church into the world, that, according to our Lord's commandment, our Father, which is in Heaven, may be glorified. And both our conversion and our sanctification in good works are only then marked by the lofty character which Jesus demands, when we make them serve, in the first place, not the guarantee of our own salvation, but rather the glorifying of God. In the second place, the Church must fan this blaze, and make it brighter, by the communion of the saints and by the Sacraments. Only when hundreds of candles are burning from one candelabrum, can the full brightness of the soft candle-light strike us, and in the same way it is the communion of saints which has to unite the many small lights of the single believers so that they may mutually increase their brightness, and Christ, walking in the midst of the seven candlesticks, may sacramentally purify the glow of their brightness to a still more brilliant fervour. Thus the purpose of the Church does not lie in us, but in God, and in the glory of His name.—From this solemn purpose originates, in the same way, the severely spiritual cultus which Calvinism tried to restore in the services of the Church. Even Von Hartman, the far-from-Christian philosopher, perceived that cultus becomes more religious just in proportion as it has the courage to despise all external show, and the energy to evolve itself from symbolism, in order to clothe itself in beauty of a much higher order,—the inward, spiritual beauty of the worshipping soul. Sensual church services tend to soothe and flatter *man* religiously, and only the purely spiritual service of Calvinism aims at the pure worship of God, and at adoration of Him in spirit and in truth.—The same tendency leads our church discipline, that indispensable element of every genuine Calvinistic church activity. Church discipline was also instituted in the first place, not to prevent



scandals, nor even primilarily to prune the wild branches, but rather *to preserve the sanctity of the Covenant of God*, and ever to impress upon the outside world the solemn fact that God is too pure to look upon evil.—Finally we have the service of Church *philanthropy*, in the Diaconate which Calvin alone understood, and restored to its primordial honor. Neither Rome nor the Greek Church, neither the Lutheran nor the Episcopal Church, caught the real meaning of the Diaconate. Calvinism alone has restored the Diaconate to its place of honor, as an indispensable and constitutive element of ecclesiastical life. But, in this Diaconate, also, the lofty principle must prevail that it may not glorify those who givè alms, but only the name of Him who moves the hearts of the people to liberality. The Deacons are not *our* servants, but servants of Christ. That which we commit to them we simply give back to Christ, as stewards of what is His property; and in His name it must be distributed to His poor,—our brothers and sister The poor church-member, who thanks the Deacon and the giver, but not Christ, actually denies Him who is the real and divine Giver, and who through his deacons, purposes to make it manifest that He is a Savior, not for the soul alone, but also for the body,—or to express it more pointedly, that for the whole man, and for the whole of life He is the *Christus Consolator*, the heavenly Redeemer, anointed and appointed by God Himself, for our fallen race, from all eternity. And so, as you see, the result proves incontestably that in Calvinism, the fundamental conception of the *Church* fits perfectly to the fundamental idea of *Religion*. All egoïsm and endaimonism are excluded from both, even unto the end. Always and ever we have a *Religion*, and a *Church*, for the sake of God, and not for the sake of man. The origin of the Church is in God, its form of manifestation is from God, and from beginning to end, its purpose is and remains *to magnify God's glory*.

---





Now finally, I come to the fruit of religion in our *practical life*, or the position taken by Calvinism in the *question of morals*:—the third and last division, with which this lecture on *Calvinism and Religion* will naturally conclude.

Here, the first thing that attracts our attention is the apparent contradiction between a confession, which, it is alleged, blunts the edge of moral incentives, and a practice, which, in moral earnestness exceeds the practice of all other religions. The Antinomian and the Puritan seemed to be mingled in this field like tares and wheat, so that at first sight it seemed as though the Antinomian were the logical result of the Calvinistic confession, and as though it were only by a fortunate inconsistency that the Puritan could infuse the warmth of his moral earnestness, into the all congealing chill emanating from the dogma of predestination. Romanists, Lutherans, Remonstrants and Libertines have ever charged against Calvinism that its absolute doctrine of predestination, culminating in the perseverance of saints, must necessarily result in a too easy conscience and a dangerous laxity of morals. But Calvinism answers this charge, not by opposing reasoning against reasoning, but by putting a fact of world-wide reputation over against this false deduction of fictitious consequences. It simply asks:—"What rival moral fruits have other religions to oppose if we point to the high moral earnestness of the Puritans?" "Shall we continue in sin that grace may abound" is the old diabolical whisper which the evil spirit hurled against the Holy Apostle himself in the childhood of the Christian Church. And when, in the sixteenth century the Heidelberg Catechism had to defend Calvinism against the shameful charge;—"Does not this doctrine lead to careless and ungodly lives?" Ursinus and Olevianus had to deal with nothing else than the echoing and monotonous repetition of the same old slander. Certainly the ungodly lust to persist in, and even to foster, indwelling sin, yea even Antinomionism itself, again and again abused the



Calvinistic confession, seizing it like a shield, to hide the carnal appetites of the unconverted heart. But as little as the mechanical repetition of a written confession had ever anything in common with genuine religion, just so little may the Calvinistic Confession be made responsible for those reverberating stone pillars, echoing Calvin's formulas, but without a grain of Calvinistic earnestness in their heart. He only is the real Calvinist, and may raise the Calvinistic banner, who in his own soul, personally, has been struck by the Majesty of the Almighty, and yielding to the overpowering might of his eternal Love, has dared to proclaim this majestic love, over against Satan, and the world, and the worldliness of his own heart, in the personal conviction of being chosen by God Himself, and therefore of having to thank Him and Him alone, for every grace everlasting. Such an one could not but tremble before the might and the majesty of God, as a matter of course accepting His Word as the ruling principle of His conduct in life;—a principle which has led so far that for its strong attachment to the Scriptures, Calvinism has been censured, as being a *nomistic* religion, but without any warrant. *Nomistic* is the appropriate name for a religion which proclaims salvation to be attained by the fulfilment of the law, while Calvinism, on the other hand, in a thoroughly soteriological sense, never derived salvation but from Christ and the atoning fruit of His merits.

But it remained the special trait of Calvinism that it placed the believer *before the face of God*, not only in His church, but also in his personal, family, social, and political life. The majesty of God, and the authority of God press upon the Calvinist in the whole of his human existence. He is a pilgrim, not in the sense that he is marching through a world with which he has no concern, but in the sense that at every step of the long way he must remember his responsibility to that God so full of majesty, who awaits him at his journey's end. In front of the Portal which



opens for him, on the entrance into Eternity, stands the *Last Judgment*, and that judgment shall be one broad and comprehensive test, to ascertain whether the long pilgrimage has been accomplished with a heart that aimed at God's glory, and in accordance with the ordinances of the Most High. What now does the Calvinist mean by his faith in the ordinances of God? Nothing less than the firmly rooted conviction that all life has first been in the *thoughts* of God, before it came to be realized in Creation. Hence all created life necessarily bears in itself a law for its existence, instituted by God Himself. There is no life outside us in Nature, without such divine ordinances,—ordinances which are called the laws of Nature;—a term which we are willing to accept, provided we understand thereby, not laws originating *from* Nature, but laws imposed *upon* Nature. So, there are ordinances of Heaven for the firmament above, and ordinances for the earth below, by means of which this world is maintained, and, as the Psalmist says, these ordinances are the servants of God. Consequently there are ordinances of God for our bodies, for the blood that courses through our arteries, and veins, and for our lungs as the organs of respiration. And even so are there ordinances of God, in Logic, to regulate our thoughts; ordinances of God for our imagination, in the domain of aesthetics; and so, also, strict ordinances of God for the whole of human life in the *domain of morals*. Not moral ordinances in the sense of summary general laws, which leave the decision in concrete and detailed instances to ourselves, but just as the ordinance of God determines the course of the smallest asteroid, as well as the orbit of the mightiest star, so also these moral ordinances of God descend to the smallest and most particular details, stating to us what in every case is to be considered as the will of God.

And those ordinances of God, ruling both the mightiest problems and the smallest trifles, are urged upon us,





not like the statutes of a law book, not like rules which may be read from paper, not like a codification of life, which could even for a single moment, exercise any authority of itself,—but they are urged upon us as the constant will of the omnipresent and almighty God, who at every instant is determining the course of life, ordaining its laws, and continually binding us by His moral authority. The Calvinist does not, like Kant, ascend in his reasoning from the “*Du Sollst*” (Thou shalt) to the idea of a lawgiver, but, because he stands before the face of God, because he sees God, and walks with God, and feels God in the whole of his being and existence, therefore he cannot withdraw his ear from that never silenced “*Thou shalt*”, which proceeds continually from his God, in Nature, in his body, in his reason, and in his action.

Thence it follows that he adjusts himself to these ordinances not by force, as though they were a yoke of which he would like to rid himself, but with the same readiness with which we follow a guide through the desert, recognizing that *we* are ignorant of the path, which the guide knows, and therefore acknowledging that there is no safety but in closely following in his footsteps. When our respiration is disturbed, we try irresistibly and immediately to remove the disturbance, and to make it normal again, *i. e.* to restore it, by bringing it again into accordance with the ordinances which God has given for man's respiration. To succeed in this gives us a feeling of unspeakable relief. Just so, in every disturbance of the moral life the believer has to strive as speedily as possible to restore his spiritual respiration, according to the moral commands of his God, because only after this restoration can the inward life again thrive freely in his soul, and renewed energetic action become possible. Therefore every distinction between general moral ordinances, and more special christian commandments is unknown to him. Can we imagine that at one time God willed to rule things in a certain moral



order, but that now, in Christ, He wills to rule it otherwise? As though He were not the Eternal, the Unchangeable, who, from the hour of creation even unto all eternity had willed, wills, and shall will and maintain one and the same firm moral world-order! Verily Christ has swept away the dust with which our sinful limitations had covered up this world-order, and has made it glitter again in its original brilliancy.

Verily Christ and He alone has disclosed to us the eternal love of God, which was, from the beginning, the moving principle of this world order. Above all, Christ has strengthened in us the ability to walk in this world order with a firm, unfaltering step. But the world-order itself remains just what it was from the beginning. It lays full claim, not only to the believer (as though less were required from the unbeliever), but to every human being and to all human relationships. Hence Calvinism does not lead us to philosophize on a so-called moral life, as though *we* had to create, to discover, or to regulate this life. Calvinism simply places us under the impress of the majesty of God, and subjects us to His eternal ordinances and unchangeable commandments. Hence it is that, for the Calvinist, all ethical study is based on the Law of Sinai, not as though at that time the moral world-order began to be fixed, but to honour the Law of Sinai, as the divinely authentic summary of that original moral law which God wrote in the heart of man, at his creation, and which God is re-writing on the tables of every heart at its conversion. The Calvinist is led to submit himself to the conscience, not as to an individual lawgiver, which every person carries about in himself, but as to a direct *sensus divinitatis*, through which God Himself stirs up the inner man, and subjects him to His judgment. He does not hold to religion, with its *dogmatics*, as a *separate entity*, and then place his moral life with its ethics as a *second entity* alongside of religion, but he holds to religion, as placing him in the presence of



God, Himself, Who thereby imbues him with His divine will. Love, and adoration are, to Calvin, themselves the motives of every spiritual activity, and thus the fear of God is imparted to the whole of life as a reality,—into the family, and into society, into science and art, into personal life, and into the political career. A redeemed man who in *all* things and in *all* the choices of life is controlled solely by the most searching, and heart-stirring reverence for a God who is ever present to his consciousness, and who ever holds him in his eye;—thus does the Calvinistic type present itself in history. Always and in all things the deepest, the most sacred reverence for the ever present God as the rule of life,—this is the only true picture of the original Puritan. The avoidance of the world has never been the Calvinistic mark, but the shibboleth of the Anabaptist. The specific, anabaptistical Dogma on “avoidance” proves this. According to this dogma, the Anabaptists, announcing themselves as “saints”, were severed from the world. They stood in opposition to the world. They refused to take the oath; they abhorred all military service: they condemned the holding of public offices. Here already, they shaped a new world, in the midst of a world of sin, but which had nothing to do with this present world. They rejected all obligation and responsibility towards the old world, and they avoided it systematically, for fear of contamination, and contagion. But this is just what the Calvinist always disputed and denied. It is not true that there are two worlds, a bad one and a good, which are fitted into each other. It is one and the same person whom God created perfect and who afterwards fell, and became a sinner;—and it is this same “ego” of the old sinner who is born again, and who enters into eternal life. So, also, it is one and the same world which once exhibited all the glory of Paradise, which was afterwards smitten with the curse, and which, since the Fall, is upheld by common grace;—which has now been redeemed and saved by Christ, in its centre, and which



shall pass through the horror of the judgment into the state of glory. For this very reason, however, the Calvinist cannot shut himself up in his church and abandon the world to its fate. He feels, rather, his high calling to push the development of this world to an even higher stage, and to do this in constant accordance with God's ordinance, for the sake of God, upholding, in the midst of so much painful corruption, everything that is honourable, lovely, and of good report among men. Therefore it is that we see in History (if I may be permitted to speak of my own ancestors), that scarcely had Calvinism been firmly established in the Netherlands for a quarter of a century, when there was a rustling of life in all directions, and an indomitable energy was fermenting in every department of human activity, and their commerce and trade, their handicrafts and industry, their agriculture and horticulture, their art and science, flourished with a brilliancy previously unknown, and imparting a new impulse for an entirely new development of life, to the whole of Western Europe.

This admits of only one exception, and this exception I wish both to maintain and to place in its proper light. What I mean is this.—Not every intimate intercourse with the unconverted world is deemed lawful, by Calvinism, for it placed a barrier against the too unhallowed influence of this world by putting a distinct “veto” upon three things, *card-playing, theatres, and dancing*;—three forms of amusement which I shall first treat separately, and then set forth in their combined influence.—Card-playing has been placed under a ban by Calvinism, not as though games of all kinds were forbidden, nor as though something demoniacal lurked in the cards themselves, but because it fosters in our heart the dangerous tendency to look away from God, and to put our trust in *Fortune* or *Luck*. A game which is decided by keenness of vision, quickness of action, and range of experience, is ennobling in its character, but a game like cards, which is chiefly decided by the way in which the





cards are arranged in the pack, and blindly distributed, induces us to attach a certain significance to that fatal imaginative power, outside of God, called *Chance* or *Fortune*. To this kind of unbelief, every one of us is inclined. The fever of stock-gambling shews daily how much more strongly people are attracted and influenced by the nod of Fortune, than by solid application to their work. Therefore the Calvinist judged that the rising generation should be guarded against this dangerous tendency, whereas, by means of card-playing it would be fostered. And since the sensation of God's ever-enduring presence was felt by Calvin and his adherents as the never-failing source from which they drew their stern seriousness of life, they could not help loathing a game which poisoned this source by placing Fortune above the disposition of God, and the hankering after chance above the firm confidence in His will. To fear God, and to bid for the favors of Fortune seemed to him as irreconcilable as fire and water.

Entirely different objections were entertained against *Theatre-going*. In itself there is nothing sinful in fiction;—the power of the imagination is a precious gift of God Himself. Neither is there any special evil in *dramatic* imagination. How highly did Milton appreciate Shakespeare's Drama, and did not he himself write in dramatic form? Nor did the evil lie in public theatrical representations, as such. Public performances were given for all the people at Geneva, in the Market Place, in Calvin's time, and with his approval. No, that which offended our ancestors was not the comedy or tragedy, nor should have been the opera, or the operetta, in itself, but the moral sacrifice which as a rule was demanded of actors and actresses, for the amusement of the public. A theatrical troop, in those days especially, stood, morally, very low. This low moral standard resulted partly from the fact that the constant and ever-changing presentation of the character of other people, finally hampers the moulding of your per-



sonal character; and partly because, unlike the Greeks, modern Theatres have introduced the presence of women on the stage, the prosperity of the Theatre being too often ganged by the measure in which a woman jeopardizes the most sacred treasures God entrusts to her,—her stainless name, and irreproachable conduct. Certainly, a strictly moral Theatre is very well conceivable, but with the exception of a few large cities, such Theatres would neither be sufficiently patronized nor could exist financially, and the actual fact remains that, taking all the world over, the prosperity of a Theatre often increases in proportion to the moral degradation of the actors. For often therefore the prosperity of Theatres is purchased at the cost of manly character, and of female purity; and to purchase delight for the ear and the eye at the price of such a moral hetacomb, the Calvinist, who honoured whatever was human in man, for the sake of God, could not but condemn. Finally, so far as the *dance* is concerned, even worldly papers, like the parisian “*Figaro*”, at present justify the position of the Calvinist. Only recently an article in this paper called attention to the moral pain with which a father takes his daughter into the Ball-room for the first time. This moral pain, it declared, is evident, in Paris at least, to all who are familiar with the whisperings, indecent looks and actions prevalent in those pleasure-loving circles. Here, also, the Calvinist does not protest against the Dance itself, but exclusively, against the impurity to which it is often in danger of leading. With this I return to the barrier of which I spoke. Our fathers perceived excellently well that it was just these three,—Dancing, Card-playing, and Theatres,—with which the world was madly in love. In worldly circles these pleasures were not regarded as secondary trifles, but honoured, as all-important matters; and whoever dared to attack them, exposed himself to the bitterest scorn and enmity. For this very reason, they recognized, in these three, the *Rubicon* which no



true Calvinist could cross without sacrificing his earnestness to dangerous mirth, and the fear of the Lord to often far from spotless pleasures. And now may I ask,—has not the result justified their strong and brave protest? Even yet, after a lapse of three centuries, you will find, in my Calvinistic country, entire social circles into which this worldliness is never allowed to enter, but in which the richness of human life has turned, from without, inward, and in which, as the result of a sound spiritual concentration, there has been developed such a deep sense of everything high, and such an energy for everything holy as to excite the envy even of our Antagonists. Not only has the wing of the Butterfly in those circles been preserved intact, but even the gold-dust upon this wing shines as brilliantly as ever.

This now is the proof to which I invite your respectful attention. Our age is far ahead of the Calvinistic age in its overflowing mass of ethical essays and treatises and learned expositions. Philosophers and Theologians really vie with one another in discovering for us, or in hiding from us, just as you may be pleased to put it, the straight road in the domain of morals. But there is something that all this host of learned scholars have *not* been able to do. They have not been able to restore moral firmness to the enfeebled public conscience.

Rather must we complain that ever more and more the foundations of our moral building are gradually being loosened and unsettled, until finally there remains not one stronghold left of which the people in their wider ranks can feel that it guarantees moral certainty for the Future. Statesmen and Jurists are openly proclaiming the right of the strongest; the ownership of property is called stealing; free love has been advocated, and honesty is ridiculed. A pantheist has dared to put Jesus and Nero on the same footing; and Van Nietzsche, going further still, deemed Christ's blessing of the meek to be the curse of humanity.

Now compare with all this the marvellous results of





three centuries of Calvinism. Calvinism understood that the world was not to be saved by ethical philosophizing, but only by the restoration of tenderness of conscience. Therefore it did not indulge in reasoning, but appealed directly to the soul, and placed it face to face with the Living God, so that the heart trembled, at His holy majesty, and in that majesty, discovered the glory of His love. And when, going back in this historical review, you observe how thoroughly corrupt and rotten Calvinism found the world, to what depth moral life at that time had sunken, in the courts, and among the people, in the clergy, and among the leaders of science, among men and women, among the higher and the lower classes of society:—then what censor among you will dare to deny the palm of moral victory to Calvinism, which in one generation, though hunted from the battlefield to the scaffold, created, throughout five nations at once, wide serious groups of noble men and still nobler women, hitherto unsurpassed in the loftiness of their ideal conceptions and unequalled in the power of their moral self-control.

---



Transcribed by Dr. Henry C. ...

### THIRD LECTURE.

#### CALVINISM AND POLITICS.

My third lecture leaves the sanctuary of religion and enters upon the domain of the State; the first transition from the Sacred Circle to the secular field of human life. Only now therefore we proceed, summarily and in principle, to eradicate the wrong idea, that Calvinism represents an exclusively ecclesiastical and dogmatic movement.

The religious momentum of Calvinism has placed, beneath political Society, a fundamental conception, all its own, just because it did not only prune the branches and clean the stem, but reached down to the very root of life.

That this *had to be so* becomes evident at once to everyone, who is able to appreciate that a political scheme has never become dominant, which was not founded in a specific religious conception.

And that this *has* been the fact, as regards Calvinism, may appear from the political changes, which it has effected in those three historic lands of political freedom, the Netherlands, England and America.

Every competent historian will without exception confirm the words of Bancroft:—"The fanatic for Calvinism was a fanatic for liberty, for in the moral warfare for freedom,



his creed was a part of his army, and his most faithfully in the battle.”<sup>1</sup> And Groen van Prinsterer has thus expressed it: “in Calvinism lies the origin and guarantee of our constitutional liberties.” That Calvinism has led public law into new paths, first in Western Europe, then in two Continents, and to-day more and more among all civilized nations, is admitted by scientific students, if not yet fully by public opinion.

But for the purpose I have in view, the mere statement of this important fact is insufficient.

In order that conviction may be aroused and the influence of Calvinism on our political development guaranteed for the future, it must be shown,—for what fundamental political conceptions Calvinism has opened the door, and how these political conceptions sprang from its root in religion.

Allow me to argue this matter in detail by pointing out to you a threefold Sovereignty:—

1. *the Sovereignty in the sphere of the State*; 2. *the Sovereignty in the sphere of Social life*; and 3. *the Sovereignty in the sphere of the Church*.

First then Sovereignty in that political sphere, which is defined as *the State*. And then we admit that the impulse to form states arises from man's social nature, which was expressed already by Aristotle, when he called man a “ζῷον πολιτικόν.” God might have created men as disconnected individuals, standing side by side and without genealogical coherence. Just as Adam was separately created, the second and third and every further man might have been individually called into existence; but this was not the case.

---

<sup>1</sup> *History of the United States, from the discovery of the U. States*. Fifteenth Ed. Boston 1853. I. 464.



Man is created from man, and by virtue of his birth he is organically united with the whole race. Together we form *one humanity*, not only with those who are living now, but also with all the generations behind us and with all those who shall come after us,—pulverized into millions though we may be.

All the human race is from *one blood*. But the conception of States, which subdivide the earth into continents, and each continent into morsels, does not harmonize with this idea.

Then only would the organic unity of our race be realized politically, if one State could embrace all the world, and if the whole of humanity were associated in one world-empire.

Had sin not intervened, no doubt, this would actually have been so. If sin, as a disintegrating force, had not divided humanity into different sections, nothing would have marred or broken the organic unity of our race.

And the mistake of the Alexanders and of the Augusti and of the Napoleons was not, that they were charmed with the thought of the *One World-empire*, but it was this—that they endeavored to realize this idea notwithstanding that the force of sin had dissolved our unity.

In like manner the international cosmopolitan endeavors of the Social-democracy present, in their conception of union, an ideal, which on this very account charms us, even when we are aware that they try to reach the unattainable, in endeavouring to realize this high and holy ideal, now and in a sinful world.

Nay even Anarchy, conceived as the attempt to undo all mechanical connections among men, together with the undoing of all human authority, and to encourage, in their stead, the growth of a new organic tie, arising from nature itself,—I say, all this is nothing but a looking backward after a lost paradise.





For indeed without sin there would have been neither magistrate nor state-order; but political life, in its entirety, would have evolved itself, after a patriarchal fashion, from the life of the family.

Neither bar of justice, nor police nor army, nor navy is conceivable in a world without sin; and thus every rule and ordinance and law would drop away, even as all control and assertion of the power of the magistrate would disappear, were life to develop itself, normally and without hindrance, from its own impulse.

Who binds up, where nothing is broken? Who uses crutches, where the limbs are sound?

Every State-formation, every assertion of the power of the magistrate, every mechanical means of compelling order and of guaranteeing a safe course of life is therefore always something unnatural; something, against which the deeper aspirations of our nature rebel; and which, on this very account, may become the source both of a dreadful abuse of power, by those who exercise it, and of a contumacious revolt by the multitude.

Thus originated the battle of the ages between *Authority* and *Liberty*, and in this battle it was the very innate thirst for liberty, which proved itself the God-ordained means to bridle the authority, wheresoever it degenerated into despotism.

Thus all true conception of the nature of the State and of the assumption of authority by the magistrate, but on the other hand also of the right and duty of the people to defend liberty, depend on what Calvinism has here placed in the foreground, as the primordial truth,—*that God has instituted the magistrates, by reason of sin.*

In this one thought are hidden both the *light-side* and the *shady-side* of the life of the State.

The *shady-side*, for this multitude of states ought not to exist; there should be only one world-empire. These magistrates rule mechanically and do not harmonize with our nature. And this authority of government is exercised



by *men*, and is therefore subject to all manner of despotic ambitions.

But the *light-side* also, for a sinful humanity, without division in states, without law and government, and without ruling authority, would be a veritable hell on earth; or at least a repetition of that which existed in the earth, when God drowned the first degenerate race, in the deluge. Calvinism has therefore, by its deep conception of sin, laid bare the true root of state life, and has taught us two things. First—that we have gratefully to receive, from the hand of God, the institution of the State with its magistrates, as a means of preservation, now indeed indispensable. And on the other hand also that, by virtue of our natural impulse, we must ever watch against the danger, which lurks in the power of the State, for our personal liberty.

But Calvinism has done more. Just as the depth of darkness is not apprehended, except by antithesis with the light; so also on this point, the depth of sin cannot be appreciated, unless every nation and people be placed before the face of God. In Politics also the people must not be the principal thing, so that God is only dragged in, to help this people in the hour of its need; but on the contrary God, in His Majesty, must flame before the eyes of every nation, and all nations together are to be reckoned before Him as a drop of a bucket and as the small dust of the balances. From the ends of the earth God cites all nations and peoples before His high judgment-seat. For God created the nations. They exist for Him. They are His own. And therefore all these nations, and in them all humanity, must exist for His glory and consequently after His ordinances. For in their wellbeing, when they walk after His ordinances, His divine wisdom must shine forth.

When therefore humanity falls apart through sin, in a multiplicity of separate peoples; and when sin, in the



bosom of these nations, separates and tears apart, and reveals itself in all manner of shame and unrighteousness,—the glory of God demands that these horrors be bridled, that order return to this chaos and that a compulsory force, from without, assert itself to make human society a possibility.

This right is possessed, by God and by Him alone.

No man has the right to rule over another man, or it must be, and immediately becomes, the *right of the strongest*. As the tiger in the jungle rules over the defenceless antelope, so on the banks of the Nile a Pharaoh ruled over the progenitors of the fellaheen of Egypt.

Nor can a group of men, by contract, from their own right, compel you to obey a fellow-man. What binding force is there for me in the fact, that ages ago one of my progenitors made a “Contrat Social”, with other men of that time? As man I stand, free and bold, over against the most powerful of my fellow-men.

I do not speak of the family, for here natural ties rule; but in the sphere of the State I do not yield or bow down to anyone, who is man, as I am.

Authority over men cannot arise from men. Just as little from a majority over against a minority, for history shows, almost on every page, that very often the *minority was right*. And thus to the first Calvinistic thesis that—*sin alone has necessitated the institution of governments*—, this second and no less momentous thesis is added—that—*all authority of governments on earth, originates from the Sovereignty of God alone*.

When God says to me—obey—, then I humbly bow my head, without compromising in the least my personal dignity, as a man. For, in like proportion as you degrade yourself, by bowing low to a child of man, whose breath is in his nostrils; so, on the other hand do you raise yourself, if you submit to the authority of the Lord of heaven and earth.





Thus the word of Scripture stands:—"By Me kings reign—", or as the apostle has elsewhere declared:—"The powers, that be, are ordained of God. Therefore he that resisteth the power, withstandeth the ordinance of God".

The magistrate is an instrument of common grace, to thwart all license and outrage and to shield the good against the evil. But he is more. Besides all this he is instituted by God as *His Servant*, in order that he may preserve the glorious work of God, in the creation of humanity, from total destruction. Sin attacks God's handiwork, God's plan, God's justice, God's honor, as the Supreme Artificer and Builder. Thus God, ordaining the powers that be, in order that, through their instrumentality, He might maintain *His* justice against the strivings of sin, has given to the magistrate the terrible right of life and death. Therefore all the powers that be, whether in empires or in republics, in cities or in states, rule "*by the grace of God.*" For the same reason justice bears a holy character. And from the same motive every citizen is bound to obey, not only from dread of punishment, but for the sake of conscience.

Further Calvin has expressly stated that authority, as such, is in no way affected by the question, how a government is instituted and in what form it reveals itself.

It is well known that personally he preferred a republic, and that he cherished no predilection for a monarchy, as if this were the divine and ideal form of government.

This indeed would have been the case in a sinless state. For had sin not entered, God would have remained the sole king of all men, and this condition will return, in the glory to come, when God once more will be all and in all.

God's own direct government is absolutely *monarchical*; no monotheist will deny it.

But Calvin considered a co-operation of many persons under mutual control *i.e. a republic*, desirable, now that a mechanical institution of government is necessitated by reason of sin.



In his system however, this could only amount to a gradual difference in practical excellency, but never to a fundamental difference, as regards the essence of authority.

He considers a monarchy and an aristocracy, as well as a democracy, both possible and practicable forms of government; provided it be unchangeably maintained, that no one on earth can claim authority over his fellow-men, unless it be laid upon him "*by the grace of God*"; and therefore, the ultimate duty of obedience, is imposed upon us not by man, but by God Himself.

The question how those persons, who by divine authority are to be clothed with power, are indicated, can, according to Calvin, not be answered alike for all peoples and for all time. And yet he does not hesitate to state, in an ideal sense, that the most desirable conditions there exist, where the people itself chooses its own magistrates.

Where such a condition exists he thinks that the people should gratefully recognize therein a favor of God, precisely as it has been expressed in the preamble of more than one of your constitutions:—"Grateful to almighty God that He gave us the power to choose our own magistrates."

In his Commentary on Samuel, Calvin therefore admonishes such peoples:—"And ye, o peoples, to whom God gave the liberty to choose your own magistrates, see to it, that ye do not forfeit this favor, by electing to the positions of highest honor, rascals and enemies of God."

I may add that the popular choice gains the day, as a matter of course, where no other rule exists, or where the existing rule falls away.

Wherever new States have been founded, except by conquest or force, the first government has always been founded by popular choice; and so also where the highest authority had fallen into disorder, either by want of a determination of the right of succession, or through the violence of revolution, it has always been the people who through their representatives, claimed the right to restore it.



But with equal decision, Calvin asserts that God has the sovereign power, in the way of His dispensing providence, to take from a people this most desirable condition, or never to bestow it at all, when a Nation is unfit for it, or, by its sin, has utterly forfeited the blessing.

The historic development of a people shows, as a matter of course, in what other ways authority is bestowed. This bestowal may flow from the right of inheritance, as in a hereditary monarchy. It may result from a hard-fought war, even as Pilate had power over Jesus, "given him from above." It may proceed from electors, as it did in the old German empire. It may rest with the States of the country, as was the case in the old Dutch republic. In a word it may assume a variety of forms, because there is an endless difference in the development of nations. A form of government like your own, could not exist one day in China. Even now, the people of Russia are unfit for any form of constitutional government. And among the Kaffers and Hottentots of Africa, even a government, such as exists in Russia, would be wholly inconceivable. All this is determined and appointed by God, through the hidden counsel of His providence. But in whatever way the highest authority may be conveyed, that authority remains divine in its origin, and blessed is the man, who honors God's sovereignty therein. All this however, is no *theocracy*.

A theocracy was only found in Israel, because in Israel, God intervened immediately. For both by *Urim and Thummim* and by *Prophecy*; both by His saving miracles and by His chastising judgments, He held in His own hand the jurisdiction and the leadership of His people.

But the Calvinistic confession of the sovereignty of God, holds good for all the world, is true for all nations and is of force in all authority, which man exercises over man; even in the authority, which parents possess over their children. It is therefore a political faith, which may be summarily expressed in these three theses :—



1° God only—and never any creature—is possessed of sovereign rights, in the destiny of the nations, because God alone created them, maintains them by His Almighty power, and rules them, by His ordinances. 2° Sin has, in the realm of politics, broken down the direct government of God, and therefore the exercise of authority, for the purpose of government, has subsequently been invested in men, as a mechanical remedy. And 3° In whatever form this authority may reveal itself, man never possesses power over his fellow-man, in any other way than by an authority, which descends upon him from the majesty of God.

Directly opposed to this Calvinistic confession there are two other theories. That of the *popular-sovereignty*, as it has been anti-theistically proclaimed at Paris in 1789; and that of *state-sovereignty*, as it has of late been developed by the historico-panteistic school of Germany. Both these theories are at heart identical, but for the sake of clearness they demand a separate treatment.

What was it, that impelled and animated the spirits of men in the great French revolution? Indignation at abuses, which had crept in? A horror of a crowned despotism? A noble defense of the rights and liberties of the people? In part certainly, but in all this there is so little that is sinful, that even a Calvinist gratefully recognizes, in these three particulars, the divine judgment, which at that time was executed at Paris.

But the impelling force of the French Revolution did not lie in this hatred of abuses. When Edmund Burke compares the “glorious Revolution” of 1688, with the principle of the Revolution of 1789, he says —: “Our revolution and that of France are just the reverse of each other, in almost every particular, and in the whole spirit of the transaction.”\*

\* Burke, *Works* III p. 25 Ed. Mc. Lean, London.





This same Edmund Burke, who so bitterly antagonized the French revolution, has manfully defended your own rebellion against England, as “arising from a principle of energy, showing itself in this good people the main cause of a free spirit, the most adverse to all implicit submission of mind and opinion.”

We may say the same of the rebellion of the Netherlands against Spain. All these revolutions left untouched the glory of God, nay they even proceeded from the acknowledgment of His majesty. Every one will admit this of our rebellion against Spain, under William the Silent. Nor has it even been doubted of the “glorious Revolution”, which was crowned by the arrival of William III of Orange, and the overthrow of the Stuarts. It is equally true of your own Revolution. It is expressed, in so many words, in the *Declaration of independence*, by John Hancock, that the Americans asserted themselves by virtue—“of the law of nature and of nature’s God”; that they acted—“as endowed by the Creator with certain unalienable rights”; that they appealed to—“the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of their intention”; † and that they sent forth their “declaration of Independence”—“with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence”. § In the “Articles of Confederation” it is confessed, in the preamble,—“that it hath pleased the great Governor of the world to incline the hearts of the legislators.” §§ It is also declared in the preamble of the Constitution of many of the States:—“Grateful to Almighty God for the civil, political and religious liberty, which He has so long permitted us to enjoy and looking unto Him, for a blessing upon our endeavors.” \* God is there honored

---

† *American Constitutions*, by Franklin B. Hugh, Albany Weed Parsons & Co. 1872. Vol I. p. 5.

§ Ibidem p. 8. §§ p. 49.

\* Ibidem II, p. 549.



as “the Sovereign Ruler”,<sup>†</sup> and the “Legislator of the Universe”<sup>§</sup> and it is there specifically admitted that from God the people received “the right to choose their own form of government”.<sup>††</sup> In one of the meetings of the Convention, Franklin proposed, in a moment of supreme anxiety, that they should ask wisdom from God in prayer. If any one should still doubt whether or not, the American revolution was homogeneous with that of Paris, this doubt is fully set at rest, by the bitter fight, in 1793, between Jefferson and Washington. And so the judgment of the German historian Von Holtz remains intact: “Es wäre Thorheit zu sagen dass die Rousseauschen Schriften einen Einfluss auf die Entwicklung in America ausgeübt haben.”<sup>§§</sup> (“Mere madness would it be to say that the American revolution borrowed its impelling energy from Rousseau and his writings.”)

The French Revolution is in principle distinct from all these *national* revolutions, which were undertaken with praying lips and with trust in the help of God.

The French Revolution ignores God. It opposes God. It refuses to recognize a deeper ground of political life than that which is found in nature, that is, in this instance, in man himself. Here the first article of the confession of the most absolute infidelity is—“ni Dieu ni maitre”. The sovereign God is dethroned and man with his free will is placed on the vacant throne. It is the will of man, which determines things. All power, all authority proceeds from man. Thus one comes from the individual man to the many men; and in those many men conceived as *the people*, there is thus hidden the deepest fountain of all sovereignty. There is no question, as in your Constitution, of a sovereignty, derived from God, which He, under certain conditions implants in the people.

<sup>†</sup> Ibidem p. 555.    § p. 555.    <sup>††</sup> p. 549.

<sup>§§</sup> Von Holtz, *Verfassung und Demokratie der Vereinigten Staaten von America*. Dusseldorf. 1873 I p. 96.



Here an original sovereignty asserts itself, which everywhere and in all states, can only proceed from the people itself, having no deeper root than in the human will. A sovereignty of the people therefore, which is perfectly identical with atheism. And herein lies the self-abasement. In the sphere of Calvinism, as also in your Constitution, the knee is bowed to God, while over against man the head is proudly lifted up. But here, from the standpoint of the sovereignty of the people, the fist is defiantly doubled against God, while man grovels before his fellow-men, tinseling over this self-abasement by the ludicrous fiction that, thousands of years ago, men, of whom no one has any remembrance, concluded a political contract, or, as they called it, "*Contrat Social*". Now, do you ask for the result? Then, let History tell you how the rebellion of the Netherlands, the "glorious Revolution" of England and your own rebellion against the British Crown have brought liberty to honor; and answer for yourself the question has the French Revolution resulted in anything else but the shackling of liberty, in the irons of State-omnipotence? Indeed no country in our 19<sup>th</sup> century, has made a sadder State-history than France.

No wonder that Scientific Germany has broken away from this fictitious sovereignty of the people, since the days of De Savigny and Niebuhr. The Historical school, founded by these eminent men, has pilloried the aprioristic fiction of 1789. Every historical connoisseur now ridicules it. But that which they recommended instead of it, bears no better stamp.

Now it was to be not the sovereignty of the people, but the *Sovereignty of the State*, a product of Germanic philosophical pantheism. Ideas are incarnated in the reality, and among these the idea of the State was the highest, the richest, the most perfect idea of the relation between man and man. Thus the State became a mystical conception. The State was considered as a mysterious being, with a





hidden *ego*: with a *State-consciousness*, slowly developing; and with an ever more potent *State-will*, which by a slow process endeavored to reach the highest *State-aim*. The people was not understood as with Rousseau, to be the sum total of the individuals. It was correctly seen that a people is no aggregate, but an organic whole. This organism must of necessity have its organic members. Slowly these organs arrived at their historic development. By these organs, the will of the State operates, and everything must bow before this will. This sovereign *State-will* might reveal itself in a republic, in a monarchy, in a Caesar, in an Asiatic despot, in a tyrant as Philip of Spain, or in a dictator like Napoleon. All these were but forms, in which the one *State-idea* incorporated itself; the stages of development in a never ending process. But in whatever form this mystical being of the State revealed itself, the idea remained supreme; the State shortly asserted its sovereignty and for every member of the State, it remained the touchstone of wisdom to give way to this *State-apotheosis*.

Thus all transcendent right in God, to which the oppressed lifted up his face, falls away. There is no other right, but the immanent right, which is written down in the law. The law is right, not because its contents are in harmony with the eternal principles of right, but because *it is law*. If on the morrow it fixes the very opposite, this also must be right. And the fruit of this deadening theory is, as a matter of course, that the consciousness of right is blunted, that all fixedness of right departs from our minds and that all higher enthusiasm for right is extinguished. That which exists is good, because it exists; and it is no longer the will of God, of Him Who created us and knows us, but it becomes the ever-changing will of the State, which, having no one above itself, actually becomes God and has to decide how our life and our existence shall be.

And when you further consider that this mystical State



expresses and enforces its will only through men—what further proof is demanded that this state-sovereignty even as popular sovereignty, does not outgrow the abasing subjection of man to his fellow-man and never ascends to a duty of Submission, which finds its cogency in the conscience.

Therefore in opposition both to the atheistic popular-sovereignty of the Encyclopaedians, and the pantheistic state-sovereignty of German philosophers, I maintain the sovereignty of God, that divine sovereignty, which has been proclaimed by Calvinism as the source of all authority among men.

The Calvinist upholds the highest and best in our aspirations, by placing every man and every people before the face of our Father in heaven. He takes cognizance of the fact of sin, which erstwhile was juggled away and which now, in pessimistic extravagance, is accounted the essence of our being. It points to the difference between the natural concatenation of our organic society and the mechanical tie, which the authority of the magistrate imposes. It makes it easy for us to obey authority, because, in all authority, it causes us to honor the demand of divine sovereignty. It lifts us from an obedience, born of dread of the strong arm, into an obedience for conscience sake. It teaches us to look upward from the existing law to the source of the eternal Right, in God, and it creates in us the indomitable courage, incessantly to protest against the unrighteousness of the law in the name of this highest Right. And however powerfully the State may assert itself and oppress the free individual development, above that powerful State there is always glittering, before our soul's eye, as infinitely more powerful, the majesty of the King of Kings; whose righteous bar ever maintains the right of appeal for all the oppressed, and unto whom the prayer of the people ever ascends, to bless our nation and, in that nation, us and our house!

---



So much for the sovereignty of the state. We now come to *sovereignty in the individual sphere of social life.*

In a Calvinistic sense we understand hereby, that the family, the business, science, art and so forth are all social spheres, which do not owe their existence to the State, and which do not derive the law of their life from the superiority of the state, but obey a high authority within their own bosom, which rules, by the grace of God, just as the sovereignty of the State does.

This involves the antithesis between *State* and *Society*, but upon this condition, that we do not conceive this society as a conglomerate, but as analysed in its organic parts, to honor, in each of these parts, the independent character, which appertains to them.

In this independent character a special *authority* is of necessity involved. And though in the different departments of these spheres this authority may be graduated, finally it must assume the form of the highest authority in each particular sphere. And this highest authority we intentionally call—*sovereignty in the individual sphere*, in order that it may be sharply and decidedly expressed that these different developments of social life have *nothing above themselves but God*, and that the State cannot intrude here, and has nothing to command in their domain. As you feel at once, this is the deeply interesting question of our *civil liberties*.

It is here of the highest importance sharply to keep in mind the difference in grade between the organic life of society and the mechanical character of the government;—a difference, which has been repeatedly alluded to, but which now has to be more fully considered.

Whatever among men originates directly from creation, is possessed of all the data for its development, in human nature as such.

You see this at once in the family and in the connection of blood relations and other ties. From the duality of man



and woman marriage arises. From the original existence of *one* man and *one* woman monogamy comes forth. The children exist by reason of the innate power of reproduction. Naturally the children are connected as brothers and sisters. And when by and by these children, in their turn, marry again, as a matter of course all those connections originate from blood-relationship and other ties, which dominate the whole of family-life.

In all this there is nothing mechanical. The development is spontaneous, just as that of the stem and the branches of a plant. True, sin here also has exerted its disturbing influence and has distorted much which was intended for a blessing, into a curse. But this fatal efficiency of sin has been stopped by common grace. Free-love may try to dissolve, and the concubinate to desecrate, the holiest ties, as it pleases, but, for the vast majority of our race marriage remains the foundation of human society and the family retains its position, as the primordial sphere in sociology.

The same may be said of the other spheres of life.

Nature about us may have lost the glory of paradise, by reason of sin, and the earth may bear thorns and thistles, so that we can eat our bread only in the sweat of our brow; notwithstanding all this the chief aim of all human effort remains, what it was by virtue of our creation and before the fall,—namely *dominion over nature*. And this dominion cannot be acquired, except by the exercise of the powers, which, by virtue of the ordinances of creation, are innate in nature itself. Accordingly all Science is only the application to the cosmos of the powers of investigation and thought, created within us; and Art is nothing but the natural productivity of the life of our imagination. When we admit therefore that sin, though arrested by common grace, has caused many modifications of these several expressions of life, which originated only after paradise was lost, and will disappear again, with the coming





of the Kingdom of glory;—we still maintain that the fundamental character of these expressions remains as it was originally. All together they form the life of creation, in accord with the ordinances of creation, and therefore are organically developed.

But the case is wholly different with the assertion of the powers of government. For though it be admitted that even without sin the need would have asserted itself of combining the many families, in a higher unity; this unity would have *internally* been bound up in the Kingship of God, which would have ruled regularly, directly and harmoniously in the hearts of all men, and which would *externally* have incorporated itself in a patriarchal hierarchy. Thus no States would have existed, but only one world-empire, with God as its King; exactly what is prophesied for the future which awaits us, when all sin shall have disappeared.

But it is exactly this, which sin has now eliminated from our human life. This unity does no longer exist. This government of God can no longer assert itself. This patriarchal hierarchy has been destroyed. A world-empire neither can nor may be established. For in this very desire consisted the contumacy of the building of Babel's tower. Thus peoples and nations originated. These peoples formed States. And over these States God appointed *government*. And thus, if I may be allowed the expression, it is not a natural head, which organically grew from the body of the people, but a mechanical head, which from without has been placed upon the trunk of the nation. A mere remedy therefore, for a wrong condition supervening. A stick placed by the plant to hold it up, since without it, by reason of its inherent weakness, it would fall to the ground.

The principal characteristic of government is the right of life and death. According to the apostolic testimony this government bears the sword, and this sword has a threefold meaning.

It is the sword of *justice*, to mete out corporeal punishment to the criminal. It is the sword of *war* to defend



the honor and the rights and the interests of the State against its enemies. And it is the sword of *peace*, to thwart at home all forcible rebellion.

Luther and his co-Reformers have correctly pointed out that the institution proper and the full investiture of the magistrate with power was only brought about after the flood, when God commanded that capital punishment should fall upon him who shed man's blood.

The right of taking life belongs only to Him, who can give life, *i.e.* to God; and therefore no one on earth is invested with this authority, except it be God-given. On this account, Roman law, which committed the *jus vitæ et necis* to the father and to the slave-owner, stands intrinsically much lower, than the law of Moses, which knows no other capital punishment but that by the magistrate and at his command.

The highest duty of the government remains therefore unchangeably that of *justice*, and in the second place it has to care for the people as an unit, partly *at home*, in order that its unity may grow ever deeper and may not be disturbed, and partly *abroad*, lest the national existence suffer harm. The consequence of all this is that on the one hand, in a people, all sorts of *organic* phenomena of life arise, from its social spheres, and that, high above all these, the mechanical unifying force of the government is observable. From this arises all friction and clashing. For the government is always inclined, with its mechanical authority, to invade social life, to subject it and mechanically to arrange it. Thus does the State strive for Omnipotence.

But on the other hand social life always endeavors to shake off the authority of the government, just as this endeavor at the present time again culminates in social-democracy and in anarchism, both of which aim at nothing less but the total overthrow of the institution of authority. But leaving these two extremes alone, it will be



admitted that all healthy life of people or state has ever been the historical consequence of the struggle between these two powers. It was the so-called constitutional public law, which endeavored more firmly to regulate the mutual relation of these two. And in this struggle Calvinism was the first to take its stand. Just in proportion as it honored the authority of the magistrate, instituted by God, did it lift up that second sovereignty, which had been implanted by God in the social spheres, in accordance with the ordinances of creation.

It demanded for both independence in their own sphere and regulation of the relation between both, under the law. And by this stern demand, Calvinism may be said to have generated constitutional public law, from its own fundamental idea.

The testimony of history is unassailable that this constitutional public law has not flourished in Roman Catholic or in Lutheran States, but among the nations of a Calvinistic type.

The idea is here fundamental therefore that the sovereignty of God, in its descent upon men, separates itself into two spheres. On the one hand the sphere of *State-authority* and on the other hand the sphere of the authority of the *Social circles*. And in both these spheres the inherent authority is sovereign, that is to say, it has above itself nothing but God.

And yet we are not to forget that the nature of this sovereignty, in these two spheres, is not identical. In the sphere of State-authority it compels *mechanically*, that is externally, with the strong arm. In the sphere of the authority of social life, on the contrary, it compels *organically*, that is to say by a moral and inherent force. And whilst both are thus opposed to each other, each having its own specific character, the family alone reveals an intermixture of the two. Good parents rule morally, but in extreme cases they also maintain discipline.



Now for the mechanically coërcing authority of the government any further explanation is superfluous, not so for the organic social authority.

Nowhere is the dominating character of this organic social authority more plainly discernable than in the sphere of Science. In the introduction to an edition of the "*Sententie*" of Lombard and of the "*Summa Theologica*" of Thomas Aquinas, the learned Thomist wrote:—"The work of Lombard has ruled one hundred and fifty years and has produced Thomas, and after him the '*Summa*' of Thomas has ruled all Europe (*totam Europam rexit*) during five full centuries and has generated all the subsequent Theologians".\* Suppose we admit that this language is overbold, yet the idea, here expressed, is unquestionably correct. The dominion of men like Aristotle and Plato, Lombard and Thomas, Luther and Calvin, Kant and Hegel, extends, for each of them, over a field of many ages.

Genius is a sovereign power; it forms schools, it lays hold on the spirits of men, with irresistible might; and it exercises an immeasurable influence on the whole condition of human life. This sovereignty of genius is a gift of God, possessed only by His Grace. It is subject to no one and is responsible to Him alone Who has granted it this ascendancy.

The same phenomenon is observable in the sphere of Art. Every master-artist is a king in the Palace of Art, not by the law of inheritance or by appointment, but only by the grace of God. And these *maîtres* also impose authority, and are subject to no one, but rule over all and in the end receive from all the homage due to their artistic superiority.

And the same is to be said of the sovereign power of personality. There is no equality of persons. There are weak narrow minded persons, with no broader expanse of wings than a common sparrow; but there are also broad,

\* Edition of Migne at Paris 1841. Tome 1, proof 1.





imposing characters, with the wing-stroke of the eagle. Among the last you will find a few of royal grandeur and these rule in their own sphere, whether people draw back from them or antagonize them; usually waxing all the stronger, the more they are opposed. And this entire process is carried out in all the spheres of life. In the labor of the mechanic, in the shop, or on the exchange, in commerce, on the sea, in the field of benevolence and philanthropy. Everywhere one man is more powerful than the other, by his personality, by his talent and by circumstances. Dominion is exercised everywhere, but it is a dominion, which works organically; not by virtue of a State-investiture, but from life's sovereignty itself.

In relation herewith, and on entirely the same ground of organic superiority, there exists, side by side with this personal sovereignty, the sovereignty of *the sphere*. The university exercises scientific dominion; the Academy of fine arts is possessed of art-power; the guild exercised a technical dominion; the trades-union rules over labor;—and each of these spheres or corporations is conscious of the power of exclusive independent judgment and authoritative action, within its proper sphere of operation. Behind these organic spheres, with intellectual, aesthetical and technical sovereignty, the sphere of the family opens itself, with its right of marriage, domestic peace, education and possession; and in this sphere also the natural head is conscious of exercising an inherent authority,—not because the government allows it, but because God has imposed it. Paternal authority roots itself in the very life-blood and is proclaimed in the fifth Commandment.

And so also finally it may be remarked that the social life of cities and villages forms a sphere of existence, which arises from the very necessities of life, and which therefore must be autonomous.

In many different directions we see therefore that sovereignty in one's own sphere asserts itself—1° in the personal



sphere, by personal superiority; 2° in the corporative sphere of universities, guilds, associations, etc; 3° in the domestic sphere of the family and of married life; and 4° in communal autonomy.

In all these four spheres the government cannot impose its laws, but must reverence the innate law of life. God rules in these spheres, just as supremely and sovereignly as He exercises dominion in the sphere of the State, through the government.

Bound by its own mandate therefore the government may neither ignore nor modify nor disrupt the divine mandate, under which these spheres stand.

The sovereignty, by the grace of God, of the government is here set aside and limited, for God's sake, by another sovereignty, which is equally divine in origin. Neither the life of science or nor of art, nor of agriculture, nor of industry, nor of commerce, nor of navigation, nor of the family, nor of human relationship may be coerced to suit itself to the Grace of the government.

The State may never become an octopus, which stifles the whole of life.

It must occupy its own place, on its own root, among all the other trees of the forest, and thus it has to honour and maintain every form of life, which grows independently, in its own sacred autonomy.

Does this mean that the government has no right *whatever* of interference in these autonomous spheres of life? Not at all.

It possesses the threefold right and duty: 1° whenever different spheres clash, to compel mutual regard for the boundary-lines of each; 2° to defend individuals and the weak ones, in those spheres, against the abuse of power of the rest; and 3° to coerce all together to bear *personal* and *financial* burdens for the maintenance of the natural unity of the State.

But in this way exactly friction is created and thus the



danger of a clash arises. The decision cannot, in these cases, unilaterally rest with the Government. The law here has to indicate the rights of each, and the rights of the citizens over their own purses must remain the invincible bulwark against the abuse of power on the part of the government.

And here exactly lies the starting-point for that coöperation of the sovereignty of the government, with the sovereignty in the social sphere, which finds its regulation in the Constitution.

According to the order of things, in his time, this became to Calvin the doctrine of the "magistratus inferiores".

Knighthood, the rights of the city, the rights of guilds and much more, led then to the self-assertion of social "States", with their own civil authority; now Calvin wished the law to be made by the coöperation of these with the High magistrates, and so by laws he caused the abuse of power on the part of the magistrates to be restricted.

Since that time these medieval relations, which in part arose from the feudal-system, have become totally antiquated.

These corporations or social orders are now no longer invested with ruling power, their place is taken by Parliament, or whatever name the general house of representatives may bear in different countries, and now it remains the duty of those Assemblies to maintain the popular rights and liberties of all and in the name of all, *with* and if need be *against* the government.

This united defense was preferred to individual resistance, both to simplify the construction and operation of State institutions and to accelerate their functions.

But in whatever way the form may be modified, it remains essentially the old Calvinistic plan, to assure to the people, in all its classes and orders, in all its circles and spheres, in all its corporations and independent institutions, a legal and orderly influence in the making of the laws and the course of government, in a healthy democratic sense.



The only difference of opinion is yet on the important question, whether we shall continue in the now prevailing solution of the special rights of those social spheres in the individual right of franchise; or whether it is desirable to place by its side a corporative right of franchise, which shall enable the different circles to make a separate defense.

At present a new tendency to organization reveals itself even in the spheres of commerce and industry and not less in that of labor, and even from France voices arise, which clamor for the juncture of the right of franchise with these organizations.

I for one, would welcome such a move, provided its application were not onesided, much less exclusive; but I may not linger over these side issues.

I set out in the main to show how Calvinism,—by the maintenance even in the social spheres of life, of a God-given right and sovereign authority—protests against State-omnipotence, against the horrible conception that no right exists above and beyond existing laws; and against the pride of absolutism, which recognizes no constitutional rights, except as the result of princely favor.

These three representations, which find so dangerous a nourishment in the ascendancy of Pantheism, are death to our civil liberties. And Calvinism is to be praised for having built a dam across this absolutistic stream, not by appealing to popular force, nor to the hallucination of human greatness, but by deducing those rights and liberties of social life from the same source, from which the high authority of the government flows—even the *absolute sovereignty of God*. From this *one* source, in God, *sovereignty in the individual sphere*, in the family and in every social circle, is just as directly derived as the *supremacy of State-authority*. These two must therefore come to an understanding, and both have an equally sacred obligation to maintain their God-given sovereign authority and to make it subservient to the majesty of God.





A people, which abandons to State Supremacy the right of the family, or a University which abandons to it the rights of science, is just as guilty before God, as a nation which lays its hands upon the rights of the magistrates. And thus the struggle for liberty is not only declared permissible, but is made a duty for each individual in his own sphere. And this not as was done in the French Revolution, by setting God aside and by placing man on the throne of God's Omnipotence; but on the contrary, by causing all men, the magistrates included, to bow, in deepest humility, before the majesty of God Almighty.

---

As third and last part of this lecture, the discussion remains of a question yet more difficult than the previous one, namely how we must conceive of *the Sovereignty of the Church* in the state.

I call this a difficult problem, not because I am in doubt as to the conclusions, or because I doubt your assent to these conclusions. For, as far as regards American life, all uncertainty in this respect is removed by what your Constitution at first declared—and has later been modified in your Confessions—concerning the liberty of worship and the separation of Church and State. And as far as I am personally concerned, more than a quarter of a century ago I wrote above my Weekly paper the motto— “A free Church in a free State.” In a hard struggle this motto has ever been lifted on high by me and our churches also are about to reconsider the article in our Confession which touches on this matter.

The difficulty of the problem lies elsewhere. It lies in the pile and fagots of Servetus. It lies in the attitude of the Presbyterians toward the Independents. It lies in the restrictions of liberty of worship and in the “civil disabilities”, under which for centuries even in the Netherlands, the Roman Catholics have suffered. The difficulty lies in the fact that an



article of our old Calviniſtic Confession of Faith entrusts to the government the task, "of defending against and of extirpating every form of idolatry and false religion and to protect the sacred service of the Church." The difficulty lies in the unanimous and uniform advice of Calvin and his epigones, who demanded intervention of the government in the matter of religion. And still more apparent is this difficulty from the undeniable fact that it has frequently been Baptists and Remonstrants who, for three successive centuries, have defended this system of a free church, against the Calvinists.

The accusation is therefore a natural one that, by choosing in favor of liberty of religion, we do not pick up the gauntlet for Calvinism, but that we directly oppose it.

In order to shield myself from this undesirable suspicion, I advance the rule—that a system is not known by what it has in common with other preceding systems; but that it is distinguished by that in which it differs from those preceding systems.

The duty of the government to extirpate every form of false religion and idolatry, dates from Constantine the Great, and was the reaction against the horrible persecutions which his pagan predecessors, on the imperial throne, had inflicted upon the sect of the Nazarene. Since that day this system has been defended by all Romish theologians and applied by all Christian princes. In the time of Luther and Calvin, it was a universal conviction that that system was the true one. Every famous theologian of the period, Melancton first of all, approved of the death by fire of Servetus; and the scaffold, which was erected at Leipzig for Krell, the thorough-Calvinists, was infinitely more reprehensible, when looked at from a protestant standpoint.

But whilst the Calvinists, in the age of the Reformation, yielded their victims, by tens of thousands, to the scaffold and the stake, (those of the Lutherans and Roman Catholics



being hardly worth counting), history has been guilty of the great and far-reaching unfairness of ever casting in their teeth this one execution by fire of Servetus, as a *crimen nefandum*.

Notwithstanding all this I do not only lament that one stake, but I do unconditionally disapprove of it; yet not as if it were the expression of a special characteristic of Calvinism, but on the contrary as the fatal expression of a system, grey with age, which Calvinism found in existence, under which it had grown up, and from which it had not yet been able entirely to liberate itself.

If I desire to know what in this respect must follow from the specific principles of Calvinism, then the question must be put quite differently.

Then we must see and acknowledge that this system of bringing differences in religious matters under the criminal jurisdiction of the government, results directly from the conviction that the Church of Christ on earth can express itself only in *one* form and as *one* institution.

This *one* church alone was the Church of Christ, and everything, which differed from her, was looked upon as inimical to this one true church.

The government, therefore, was not called upon to judge, or to weigh, or to decide for itself. There was only one Church of Christ on earth, and it was the task of the Magistrate to protect that church from schisms, heresies and sects.

But break that one Church into fragments, admit that the Church of Christ can reveal itself in many forms, in different countries; nay even in the same country, in a multiplicity of institutions; and immediately everything, which was deduced from this unity of the visible church, drops out of sight.

If it cannot be denied that Calvinism itself has ruptured the unity of the church, and that in Calvinistic countries a rich variety of all manner of church-formations



revealed itself, then it follows that we must not seek the true Calvinistic characteristic in what, for a time, it has retained of the old system, but rather in that, which, new and fresh, has sprung up from its own root.

Results have shown that, even after the lapse of three centuries, in all distinctive Roman Catholic countries, even in the South American Republics, the Roman Catholic church is and remains the State-church, precisely as does the Lutheran church in Lutheran countries. And the free church has exclusively flourished in those countries, which were touched by the breath of Calvinism, *i. e.*, in Switzerland, the Netherlands, England, Scotland and the United States of North America.

In Roman Catholic countries, the identification of the invisible and the visible church, under papal unity, is still maintained. In Lutheran countries, with the aid of "*cuius regio eius religio*", the Court-confession has been monstrously imposed on the people as the land-confession; there the Reformed were treated harshly, they were exiled and outraged, as enemies of Christ, and at Leipsic Krell has even been condemned to death. In the Calvinistic Netherlands, on the contrary, all those who were persecuted for religion's sake, found a harbor of refuge. There the Jews were hospitably received; there the Martinists were in honor; there the Mennonites flourished; and even the Remonstrants and Catholics were permitted the free exercise of their religion at home and in secluded churches. The Independents, driven from England, have found a resting place for the soles of their feet in the Calvinistic Netherlands; and from this same country the Mayflower sailed forth to transport the Pilgrim Fathers to their new fatherland.

I do not build therefore on subterfuge, but I appeal to clear historical facts. And here I repeat—the deep lying characteristic of Calvinism must be sought, not in what it has adopted from the past, but in what it has newly created.





It is remarkable, in this connection, that, from the very beginning, our Calvinistic Theologians and jurists have defended liberty of conscience against the Inquisition. Rome perceived very clearly how liberty of conscience must loosen the foundations of the unity of the church and therefore she antagonized it. But on the other hand it must be admitted that Calvinism, by praising aloud liberty of conscience, has in principle abandoned every absolute characteristic of the visible church.

As soon as in the bosom of one and the same people the conscience of one half witnessed against that of the other half, the breach had been accomplished and placards were no longer of any avail.

As early as 1649 it was declared that persecution, for faith's sake, was—"a spiritual murder, an assassination of the soul, a rage against God himself, the most horrible of sins".

And it is evident that Calvin himself wrote down the premises of the correct conclusion, by his acknowledgment that against atheists even the Catholics are our allies; by his open recognition of the Lutheran Church; and still more emphatically by his pertinent declaration: "*Scimus tres esse errorum gradus, et quibus dam fate-mur dandam esse veniam, aliis modicam castigationem sufficere, ut tantum manifesta impietas capitali supplicio plectatur.*"\* That is to say: "There exists a threefold departure from the Christian truth; a slight one, which had better be left alone; a moderate one, which must be restored by a moderate chastisement; and only manifest godlessness must be capitally punished". I admit that this is still a harsh decision, but yet a decision in which in principle the visible unity is discarded; and where that unity is broken, there liberty will dawn as a matter of course. With Rome the system of persecution issued from the

---

\* Tome VIII p. 516c Ed. Schippers.



identification of the visible with the invisible church, and from this dangerous line Calvin departed, but what he persevered in defending was the identification of our Confession of the Truth with the absolute Truth itself, and it only wanted fuller experience to realize that this proposition, true as it must ever remain in our personal conviction, may never be imposed by force upon other people.

So much for the facts. Now let us put the theory itself to the test and look successively at the duty of the magistrate in things spiritual: 1°. towards *God*, 2°. towards the *Church*, and 3°. towards *individuals*. As regards the first point, the magistrates are and remain—"God's servants." They have to recognize God as supreme ruler, from whom they derive their power. They have to serve God, by ruling the people according to *His* ordinances. They have to restrain blasphemy, where it directly assumes the character of an affront to the divine majesty. And God's supremacy is to be recognized, by confessing His name in the Constitution, by maintaining the Sabbath, by proclaiming days of prayer and thanksgiving, and by invoking His divine blessing.

Therefore in order that they may govern, according to His holy ordinances, every magistrate is in duty bound to investigate the rights of God, both in the natural life and His Word. Not to subject himself to the decision of any church, but in order that he himself may catch the light which he needs for the knowledge of the divine will. And as regards blasphemy, the *right* of the magistrates to restrain it rests in the God-consciousness innate in every man; and the *duty* to exercise this right flows from the fact that God is the supreme and sovereign Ruler over every State and over every Nation. But for this very reason the fact of blasphemy is only then to be deemed established, when the intention is apparent contumaciously to affront this majesty of God as supreme Ruler of the State. What is then punished is not the religious offense, nor the impious



sentiment, but the attack upon the foundation of public law, upon which both the State and its government are resting.

Meanwhile there is in this respect a noteworthy difference between States which are absolutely governed by a monarch, and States which are governed constitutionally : or in a republic, in a still wider range, by an extensive assembly.

In the absolute monarch the consciousness and the personal will are *one* and thus this one person is called to rule his people after his own personal conception of the ordinances of God. When on the contrary the consciousness and the will of many coöperate, this unity is lost and the subjective conception of the ordinances of God, by these many, can only be indirectly applied. But whether you are dealing with the will of a single individual, or with the will of many men, in a decision arrived at by a vote, the principal thing remains that the government has to judge and to decide independently. Not as an appendix to the Church, nor as its pupil. The sphere of State stands itself under the majesty of the Lord. In that sphere therefore an independent responsibility to God is to be maintained. The ecclesiastical estate is not sacred ; and that of the State outside of it is not profane. But both Church and State must, each in their own sphere, obey God and serve His honor. And to that end in either sphere *God's Word* must rule, but in the sphere of the State only through the conscience of the persons invested with authority. The first thing of course is and remains that all nations shall be governed in a Christian way ; that is to say in accordance with the principle which, for all statecraft, flow from the Christ. But this can never be realized except through the subjective convictions of those in authority, according to their personal views of the demands of that Christian principle, as regards the public service.

---



Of an entirely different nature is the second question, what ought to be the relation between the government and the *visible Church*. If it had been the will of God to maintain the formal unity of this visible Church, this question would have to be answered quite differently from what is now the case. That this unity was originally sought is natural. Unity of religion has great value for the life of a people and not a little charm. And only narrowmindedness can feel itself offended, by the rage of despair, wherewith Rome, in the 16th century, fought for the maintenance of that unity. It can also be easily understood that this unity was originally established. The lower a people stands in the scale of development, the less difference of opinion is revealed. We see therefore that nearly all nations begin with unity of religion. But it is equally natural that this unity is split up, where the individual life, in the process of development, gains in strength, and where multiformity asserts itself, as the undeniable demand of a richer development of life. And thus we are confronted with the fact that the visible church has been split up, and that in no country whatever the absolute unity of the visible church can be any longer maintained.

What then is the duty of the government?

Must it—for the question may be reduced to this,—must it now form an individual judgment, as to which of those many churches is the true one? And must it maintain this one over against the others? Or is it the duty of the government to suspend its own judgment and to consider the multiform complex of all these denominations, as the totality of the manifestation of the Church of Christ on earth?

From a Calvinistic standpoint we must decide in favor of the latter suggestion. Not from a false idea of neutrality, nor as if Calvinism could ever be indifferent to what is true and what false, but because the government lacks the





data of judgment and because every magisterial judgment here infringes the sovereignty of the Church. For otherwise, if the government be an absolute monarchy, you get the "cuius regio eius religio" of the Lutheran princes, which has ever been combated, from the side of Calvinism. Or if the government rests with a plurality of persons, the Church which yesterday was counted the false one, is to-day considered the true one, according to the decision of the vote; and thus all continuity of state-administration and church position is lost.

Hence it is that the Calvinists have always struggled so proudly and courageously for the liberty, that is to say for the sovereignty, of the Church, within her own sphere, in distinction from the Lutheran theologians. In Christ, they contended, the Church has her own king. Her position in the State is not assigned her by the permission of the Government, but *jure divino*. She has her own organisation. She possesses her own office-bearers, and in a similar way she has her own gifts to distinguish truth from the lie. It is therefore her privilege, and not that of the State, to determine her own characteristics as the true Church and to proclaim her own confession, as the confession of the truth.

If in this position she is opposed by other churches, she will fight against these her spiritual battle, with spiritual and social weapons: but she denies and contests the right of every one whomsoever, and therefore also of the government, to pose as a power above these different institutions and to render a decision between her and her sister-churches. The government bears the sword which wounds; not the sword of the Spirit, which decides in spiritual questions. And for this reason the Calvinists have ever resisted the idea to assign to the government a *patria potestas*. To be sure a father regulates in his family the religion of that family. But when the government was organized, the family was not set aside, but it remained, and the government received only a limited task, which



is defined by the sovereignty in the individual sphere and not least of all by the sovereignty of Christ in His Church. Only let us guard here against exaggerated Puritism and let us not refuse, in Europe at least, to reckon with the effects of historical conditions. It is an entirely different matter whether one puts up a new building, on a free lot, or whether one must restore a house, which is standing.

But this can in no regard break the fundamental rule that the government must honor the complex of Christian churches, as the multiform manifestation of the Church of Christ on earth. That it has to respect the liberty *i. e.* the sovereignty of the Church of Christ in the individual sphere of these churches. That those churches flourish most richly, when the government allows them to live from their own strength on the voluntary principle. And that therefore neither the Caesaropapy of the Czar of Russia; nor the subjection of the State to the Church, taught by Rome; nor the “*Cuius regio eius religio*” of the Lutheran jurists; nor the irreligious neutral standpoint of the French revolution; but that only the system of a free Church, in a free State, may be honored from a Calvinistic standpoint.

A standpoint, which demands two things; in the first place—that the government shall give ear to the churches as the interested parties, in everything pertaining to religion; and in the second place—that the government, in her civic sphere, shall keep her own way and shall not tolerate that a religious fraction,—say in the matter of monogamy or in any other point of civil law,—should antagonize the statute of the State.

The sovereignty of the State and the sovereignty of the Church exist side by side and they mutually limit each other.

---

Of an entirely different nature, on the contrary, is the last question, to which I referred, namely the duty of the



government, as regards the *sovereignty of the individual person*.

In the second part of this lecture I have already indicated that the developed man also possesses an individual sphere of life, with sovereignty in his own circle.

Here I do not refer to the family, for this is a social bond between several individuals. I have reference to that, which is thus expressed by Prof. Weitbrecht: „Ist doch vermöge seines gewissens jeder ein König, ein Souverain, der über jede Verantwortung erhaben ist.“ \*) (“Every man stands a king in his conscience, a sovereign in his own person, exempt from all responsibility.”) Or that, which Held has formulated in this way: „In gewisser Beziehung wird jeder Mensch supremus oder Souverain sein, denn jeder Mensch muss eine Sphäre haben, und hat sie auch wirklich, in welcher er der Oberste ist.“ †) (In some respect every man is a sovereign, for everybody must have and has, a sphere of life of his own, in which he has no one above him, but God alone.) I do not point to this to overestimate the importance of conscience, for whosoever wishes to liberate conscience, where God and His Word are concerned, I meet as an opponent not as an ally. This however does not prevent my maintaining the sovereignty of conscience, as the palladium of all personal liberty, in this sense—that conscience is never subject to man but always and ever to God Almighty.

This need of the personal liberty of conscience however, does not immediately assert itself. It does not express itself with emphasis in the child, but only in the mature man; and in the same way it mostly slumbers among undeveloped peoples and is irresistible only among highly developed nations. A man of ripe and rich development will rather become a voluntary exile, will rather suffer imprisonment, nay even sacrifice life itself, than tolerate constraint in the forum of his conscience. And the deeply rooted

\*) Weitbrecht, *Woher und Wohin*, Stuttgart 1877 p. 403.

†) Held, *Verfassungssystem* I p. 234.



repugnance against the Inquisition, which for three long centuries would not be assuaged, grew up from the conviction that its practices violated and assaulted human life in man. This imposes on the government a twofold obligation. In the first place that it must cause this liberty of conscience to be respected by the Church; and in the second place that it must give way itself to the sovereign conscience.

As regards the first, the sovereignty of the Church finds its natural limitation in the sovereignty of the free personality. Sovereign within her own domain, she has no power over those who live outside of that sphere. And wherever, in violation of this principle, transgression of power may occur, the government has to respect the claims on protection of every citizen. The Church may not be forced to tolerate as a member one whom she feels obliged to expel from her circle; but on the other hand no citizen of the State must be compelled to remain in a church which his conscience forces him to leave.

Meantime what the government in this respect demands of the churches, it must practise itself, by allowing to each and every citizen liberty of conscience, as the primordial and inalienable right of all men.

It has cost an heroic struggle to wrest this greatest of all human liberties from the grasp of despotism, and streams of human blood have been poured out before the object was attained. But for this very reason every son of the Reformation tramples upon the honor of the fathers, who does not assiduously and without retrenching, defend this palladium of our liberties. In order that it may be able to rule *men*, the government must respect this deepest ethical power of our human existence. A nation, consisting of citizens whose consciences are bruised, is itself broken in its national strength.

And even if I am forced to admit that our fathers, in theory, had not the courage of the conclusions which follow





from this liberty of conscience, for the *liberty of speech* and the *liberty of worship*; even if I am well aware that they made a desperate effort to hinder the spread of literature which they disliked, by censure and refusal of publication;— all this does not set aside the fact that the free expression of thought, by the spoken and printed word, has first achieved its victory in the Calvinistic Netherlands. Whosoever was elsewhere straightened could first enjoy the liberty of ideas and the liberty of the press, on Calvinistic ground. And thus the logical development of what was enshrined in the liberty of conscience, as well as that liberty itself, first blessed the world from the side of Calvinism.

For it is true that, in Roman lands, spiritual and political despotism have been finally vanquished by the French Revolution, and that in so far we have gratefully to acknowledge that this revolution also began by promoting the cause of liberty. But whosoever learns from history that the guillotine, all over France, for years and years could not rest from the execution of those who were of a different mind; whosoever remembers how cruelly and wantonly the Roman Catholic clergy were murdered, because they refused to violate their conscience by an unholy oath; or whosoever, like myself, by a sad experience, knows the spiritual tyranny, which liberalism and conservatism on the European Continent has applied, and is still applying, to those who have chosen different paths,—is forced to appreciate that liberty in Calvinism and liberty in the French Revolution are two different things.

In the French revolution a liberty of conscience, *which emancipates men from God*; in Calvinism a liberty of conscience, which enables every man to serve God, *according to dictates of his own heart*.



Transcribed by M. M. Steffen

#### FOURTH LECTURE.

##### CALVINISM AND SCIENCE.

In my fourth lecture allow me to draw your attention to the nexus between *Calvinism and Science*. Not, of course in order to exhaust in one lecture such a weighty subject. Four points of it only I submit to your thoughtful consideration; first, that Calvinism fostered and could not but foster *love for science*; secondly, that it restored to science *its domain*; thirdly, that it delivered science from *unnatural bonds*; and fourthly in what manner it sought and found a solution for the unavoidable *scientific conflict*.

First of all then: There is found hidden in Calvinism an impulse, an inclination, an incentive, to scientific investigation. *It is a fact*, that science has been fostered by it, and its principle demands the scientific spirit. One glorious page from the history of Calvinism may suffice to prove the fact, before we enter more fully upon the discussion of the incentive to scientific investigation found in Calvinism as such. The page from the history of Calvinism, or let us rather say of mankind, matchless in its beauty, to which I refer, is the raising of the siege of Leyden, more than three hundred years ago, which event is yet celebrated annually on the third of October: the city was invested at that time, and threatened with massacre



and plundered by the Spanish veteran troops under Don Louis de Requezens. In 1573 the future of Europe hinged upon the question, — whether Spain or the Netherlands would be victorious, and the doom of the latter country certainly would have been sealed, if, after Harlem, Leyden also had fallen into the hands of the Spaniard. The siege of Leyden was in fact a struggle between Alva and Prince William about the future course of the history of the world; and the result of the raising of the siege of Leyden was, that in the end Alva had to withdraw, and that William the Silent was enabled to unfurl the banner of liberty over Europe. Leyden entered the lists against the best troops of what was looked upon at that time as the finest army of the world, with hardly any regular soldiers within its bulwarks; defended almost exclusively by its own citizens. As early as October 1573 the siege of the hard pressed fortress was begun, but in March '74 it was temporarily broken up, in order that the Spaniards might meet in deadly conflict the troops of the Prince of Orange on the Mookerheide, which battle resulted in a complete rout of the Dutch and the death of two brothers of the Prince. Soon however, the Spaniards, elate with their victory, returned to the walls of Leyden, pressing, for nearly six months, in their iron grasp the almost defenceless city, scantily supplied as it was with regulars and victuals. Three months after the commencement of the siege, the supply of bread became exhausted. A fearful famine began to rage. The apparently doomed citizens managed to live on dogs and rats; and this black famine was soon followed by the black death or the plague, which carried off a third part of the inhabitants. The Spaniard offered peace and pardon to the dying people, but Leyden, remembering the bad faith of the enemy in the treatment of Narden and Harlem, answered boldly and with pride: If it is necessary, we are ready to consume our left arm, and to defend with our right arm our wives, our liberty and our religion against thee, o tyrant. And even if it were our destiny,



to perish, we will rather with our own hand set fire to the city and perish in the flames with our wives and children, than be crushed by thy treachery and violence. Thus they persevered. They patiently waited for the coming of the Prince of Orange, to raise the siege, and the prince waited for God. The dikes of the province of Holland had been cut through: the country surrounding Leyden was flooded, and a fleet lay ready to hasten to Leyden's aid, but the wind drove the water back, preventing the fleet from passing the shallow pools. God tried his people sorely. At last however, on the first of October, the wind turned towards the West, and, forcing the waters upward, enabled the fleet to reach the City. Then the Spaniards fled in haste to escape the rising tide. On the 3<sup>rd</sup> of October the fleet entered the port of Leyden, and, the siege being raised, Holland was saved. The population, all but starved to death, could scarcely drag themselves along, yet all to a man, limped as well as they could to the house of prayer. All fell on their knees and gave thanks to God. But when they tried to utter their gratitude in psalms of praise, they were almost voiceless, for there was no strength left in them, and the tones of their song died away in grateful sobbing and weeping.

Behold what I called a glorious page in the history of liberty, written in blood, and if you now ask me, what has this to do with *science*, see here the answer: In recognition of such patriotic courage, the States of Holland did not present Leyden with a handful of knightly orders, or gold, or honor, but with a School of the Sciences,—the University of Leyden, renowned through the whole world. The German is surpassed by none in pride of his scientific glory, and yet no less a man than Niebuhr, has testified, "that the Senate chamber of Leyden's University is the most memorable hall of science." The ablest scholars were induced to fill the amply endowed chairs. Scaliger was conveyed from France in a man-of-war. Salmasius came





to Leyden under convoy of a whole squadron. Why should I give you the long list of names of the princes of science, of the giants in learning, who have filled Leyden with the lustre of their renown, or tell you how this love for science, going forth from Leyden, permeated the whole nation? You know the Lipsius, the Hemsterhuis, the Boerhaves. You know that in Holland were invented the telescope, the microscope and the thermometer; and thus empirical science, worthy of its name, was made possible. It is an undeniable fact, that the Calvinists in the Netherlands *had* love for science and fostered it. But the most evident, the most convincing proof is doubtless found in the establishment of Leyden's University. To receive as the highest reward a University of the Sciences in a moment, when, in a fearful struggle, the course of the history of the world was turned by such heroism is only conceivable among a people, in whose very life-principle love for science is involved.

And now I approach the principle itself. For it is not enough to be acquainted with the fact, I must also show you why it is that Calvinism cannot but foster love for science. And do not think it strange, when I point to the Calvinistic dogma of predestination as the strongest motive in those days for the cultivation of science in a higher sense. But in order to prevent a possible misunderstanding let me first explain what the term "science" means.

I speak of human science as a whole, not of what is called among you "sciences", or as the French express it "sciences exactes". Especially do I deny, that mere empiricism in itself ever is perfect science. Even the minutest microscopic, the farthest reaching telescopic investigation is nothing but *perception* with strengthened eyes; this is transformed into science, when you discover in the specific phenomena, perceived by empiricism, the universal *law*, and thereby reach *the thought*, which governs the whole constellation of phenomena. In this wise the special sciences originate; but even in them the human mind cannot acquiesce. The



subject-matter of the several sciences must be grouped under one head and brought under the sway of one principle by means of theory or hypothesis, and finally philosophy, as the queen of sciences, comes forth from her tent to weave all the different results into one organic whole. It is true, I know, that Dubois Raymond's winged word *Ignorabimus* has been used by many, to make it seem impossible that our thirst for science in the highest sense will ever be quenched, and that Agnosticism, drawing a curtain across the background and over the abysses of life, is satisfied with a study of the phenomena of the several sciences; but some time ago already, the human mind began to revenge itself on this spiritual vandalism. The question about the origin, interconnection and destiny of everything that exists, cannot be suppressed; and the *veni, vidi, vici*, wherewith the theory of evolution with full speed, occupied the ground in all the circles, inimical to the Word of God, and especially among our naturalists, is a convincing proof, how much we need unity of view.

How, now, can we prove that love for science in that higher sense, which aims at unity in our cognizance of the entire cosmos, is effectually secured by means of our Calvinistic belief in God's fore-ordination? If you want to understand this you have to go back from predestination to God's decree. This is not a matter of choice; on the contrary, it *must* be done. Belief in predestination is nothing but the penetration of God's decree into our own personal life; or, if you prefer it, the personal heroism to apply the sovereignty of God's decreeing will to our own existence. It means that we are not satisfied with a mere profession of words, but that we are willing to stand by our confession, in regard both to this life and the life to come. It is a proof of honesty, unmovable firmness and solidity in our expressions concerning the unity of God's Will, and the certainty of his operations. It is a deed of high courage, because it brings you under the suspicion of



high-mindedness. But if you now proceed to the decree of God, what else does this dogma mean, than the certainty that the existence and course of all things, *i.e.* of the entire cosmos, instead of being a plaything of caprice and chance, obeys law and order, and that there exists a firm will which carries out its designs both in nature and in history. Now do you not agree with me, that this forces upon our mind the indissoluble conception of one all-comprehensive unity; and the acceptance of one principle by which everything is governed. It forces upon us the recognition of something that is general, hidden and yet expressed in that which is special. Yea, it forces upon us the confession, that there must be stability and regularity ruling over everything. Thus you recognize that the cosmos, instead of being a heap of stones, loosely thrown together, on the contrary presents to our mind a monumental building erected in a severely consistent style. Do you abandon this point of view, then it is uncertain at any moment, what is to happen, which course things may take, what every morning and evening may have in store for you, your family, your country, the world at large. Man's capricious will is then the principal concern. Every man may then choose and act every moment in a certain way, but it is also possible that he may do just the reverse. If this were so, you could count upon nothing. There is no interconnection, no development, no continuity; a chronicle, but no history. And now tell me, what becomes of science under such conditions? You may yet speak of the study of nature, but the study of human life has been made ambiguous and uncertain. Nothing but bare facts may then be historically ascertained, interconnection and plan have no longer a place in history. History dies away.

I do not for a moment propose to enter just now into a discussion about man's free will. We have no time for it. But it is a fact that the more thorough development of science in our age has almost unanimously decided in



favor of Calvinism with regard to the antithesis between the unity and stability of God's decree, which Calvinism professes, and the superficiality and looseness, which the Arminians preferred. The systems of the great philosophers are, almost to one, in favor of unity and stability. Buckle's *History of the civilization of England* has succeeded in proving the firm order of things in human life with astonishing, almost mathematical demonstrative force. Lombroso, and following him the entire school of determinists among the criminalists, place themselves on record in this respect as moving on Calvinistic lines. And the latest hypothesis, that the laws of heredity and variation, which control the whole organization of nature, admit of no exception in the domain of human life, has already been accepted as "the common creed" by all evolutionists. Though I abstain at present from any criticism either of these philosophical systems or of these naturalistic hypotheses, so much at least is very clearly demonstrated by them, that the entire development of science in our age presupposes a cosmos, which does not fall a prey to the freaks of chance, but exists and develops from one principle, according to a firm order, aiming at one fixed plan. This is a claim, which is, as it clearly appears, diametrically opposed to Arminianism, and in complete harmony with Calvinistic belief, that there is one will in God, the cause of all existing things, subjecting them to his ordinances and directing them towards a preestablished plan. Calvinists have never thought that the idea of the cosmos lay in God's foreordination as an aggregate of loosely conjoined decrees, but they have always maintained, that the whole formed one organic programme of the entire creation and the entire history. We have always felt the need to speak of natural laws, with this proviso however, that they were not considered as laws, which nature imposes upon *us*, but as laws imposed *upon nature* by God. And as a Calvinist looks upon God's decree as the foundation and origin of the natural laws, in the





same manner also he finds in it the firm foundation and the origin of the moral and spiritual laws; both these, the natural as well as the moral laws, forming together one high order, which exists according to God's command, and wherein God's counsel will be accomplished in the consummation of His eternal, all-embracing plan.

Faith in such an unity, stability and order of things, personally, as predestination, cosmically, as the counsel of God's decree, could not but awaken as with a loud voice, and vigorously foster love for science. Without a deep conviction of this unity, this stability and this order, science is unable to go beyond mere conjectures, and only when there is faith in the organic dependence of the Universe, will there be also a possibility for science to ascend from the empirical investigation of the special phenomena to the general, and from the general to the law which rules over it, and from that law to the principle, which is dominant over all. The data, which are absolutely indispensable for all higher science, are at hand only under this supposition. Remember the fact, that in those days, when Calvinism cleared for itself a path in life, tottering semi-pelagianism had blunted this conviction of unity, stability and order, to such an extent, that even Thomas Aquinas lost a great deal of his influence, while Scotists, mystics and epicureans vied with one another in their endeavors to deprive the human mind of its steady course. And who is there who does not perceive, what entirely new impulse to undertake scientific investigations had to grow out of the newly born Calvinism, which with one powerful grasp brought order out of chaos, putting under discipline so dangerous a spiritual licentiousness making an end to that halting between two or more opinions, and showing us instead of rising and falling mists, the picture of a powerfully rushing mountain stream, taking its course through a well regulated bed towards an ocean which waits to receive it. Calvinism has gone through many fierce



struggles on account of its clinging to the counsel of God's decree. Again and again it seemed to be near the brink of destruction. Calvinism has been reviled and slandered on account of it, and when it refused to exclude even our sinful actions from God's plan, because without it the programme of the order of the world would again be rent to pieces, our opponents did not shrink from accusing us of making God the author of sin. They knew not what they did. Through evil report and good report Calvinism has firmly maintained its place. It has not allowed itself to be deprived by scoff and scorn of the firm conviction, that our entire life must be under the sway of *unity*, *solidity* and *order*, established by God himself. This accounts for its need of unity of insight, firmness of knowledge, order in its world view, fostered among us, even in the wide circles of the common people. and this manifest need is the reason, that a thirst for knowledge was quickened, which in those days was nowhere satisfied in a more abundant measure than in Calvinistic countries. This explains, why it is, that in the writings of those days you meet with such a determination, such an energy of thought, such a comprehensive view of life. I even venture to say, that in the memoirs of noble women of that century, and in the correspondence of the unlettered, an unity of world- and lifeview is manifest. which impressed a scientific stamp on their whole existence. Intimately connected with this is also the fact that they never favored the so-called primacy of the will. They demanded, in their practical life, the bridle of a clear consciousness, and in this consciousness the leadership could not be entrusted to humor or whim, to fancy or chance. but only to the majesty of the highest principle, wherein they found the explanation of their existence and to which their whole life was consecrated.

---



I now leave my first point, that Calvinism fostered *love for science*, in order to proceed to the second, that Calvinism restored to science *its domain*. I mean to say that cosmical science originated in the Graeco-Roman world; that in the middle ages the cosmos vanished behind the horizon to draw the attention of all to the distant sights of future life, and that it was Calvinism which, without losing sight of the spiritual, led to a rehabilitation of the cosmic sciences. If we were forced to choose between the beautiful cosmic taste of Greece with its blindness for things eternal, and the middle ages with their blindness for cosmical things, but with their mystic love for Christ, then certainly every child of God on his death-bed would tender the palm to Bernard of Clairvaux and Thomas Aquinas rather than to Heraclitus and Aristotle. The pilgrim, who wanders through the world without concerning himself about its preservation and destiny, presents to us a more ideal figure than the Greek worldling, who sought religion in the worship of Venus, or Bacchus, and who flattered himself in hero-worship, debased his honour as a man in the veneration of prostitutes, and at last sank lower than the brutes in pederasty. Let it be quite understood therefore that I do not in any way over-rate the classical world, to the detraction of the heavenly lustre which sparkled through all the mists of the middle ages. But notwithstanding all this I assert and maintain, that the one Aristotle knew more of the cosmos than all the churchfathers, taken together; that under the dominion of Islam, better cosmic science flourished than in the cathedral- and monastic-schools of Europe; that the recovery of the writings of Aristotle was the first incentive to renewed, though rather deficient cosmic study, and that Calvinism alone, by means of its dominating principle, which constantly urges us to go back from the Cross to creation, and no less by means of its doctrine of *common grace*, threw open again to science the vast field of the cosmos, now illumined by the Sun of



righteousness, of whom the Scriptures testify, that in him are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. Let us pause then to consider first that general principle of Calvinism and afterwards the dogma of common grace.

All agree that the Christian religion is substantially soteriological. "What must I do to be saved?" remains throughout all the ages the question of the anxious inquirer, to which above all else an answer must be given. This question is unintelligible for those who refuse to view time in the light of eternity, and who are accustomed to think of this earth without organic and moral connection with the life to come. But of course, wherever two elements appear, as in this case the sinner and the saint, the temporal and the eternal, the terrestrial and the heavenly life, there is always danger of losing sight of their interconnection and of falsifying both by error or one-sidedness. Christendom, it must be confessed, did not escape this error. A dualistic conception of regeneration was the cause of the rupture between the life of nature and the life of grace. It has, on account of its too intense contemplation of heavenly things, neglected to give its attention to the world of God's creation. It has, on account of its exclusive love of things eternal, been backward in the fulfilment of its temporal duties. It has neglected the care of the body, because it cared too exclusively for the soul. And this one-sided, inharmonious conception in the course of time has led more than one sect to a mystic worshipping of Christ alone, to the exclusion of God the Father Almighty, *maker of heaven and earth*. Christ was conceived exclusively as the Savior, and his cosmological significance was lost out of sight.

This dualism, however, is by no means countenanced by the Holy Scriptures. When John is describing the Saviour, he first tells us that Christ is the eternal Word, by whom all things are made, and who is the life of men. Paul also testifies that all things were created by Christ and consist





by him;" and further, that the object of the work of redemption is not limited to the salvation of individual sinners, but extends itself to the redemption of the world, and to the organic reunion of all things in heaven and on earth under Christ as their original head. Christ himself does not speak only of the regeneration of the heart, but also of creation as a whole. The whole creation groaneth waiting for the bursting forth of the glory of the children of God. And when John on Patmos listened to the hymns of the Cherubim and the Redeemed, all honor, praise and thanks are given to God, "Who has created the heaven and *the earth*." The Apocalypse returns to the startingpoint of Gen. I, 1.: "In the beginning God created the heaven and *the earth*." In keeping with this, the final outcome of the future, foreshadowed in the II. Scriptures, is not the merely spiritual existence of saved souls, but the restoration of the entire cosmos, when God will be all in all under the renewed heaven on the renewed earth. Now this wide, comprehensive, cosmical meaning of the gospel has been apprehended by Calvin, apprehended not as a result of a dialectic process, but of the deep impression of God's majesty, which had moulded his personal life.

Certainly our salvation is of substantial weight, but it cannot be compared with the much greater weight of the glory of our God, Who has revealed His majesty in His wondrous creation. This creation is his handiwork, and being marred by sin, the way was opened, it is true for a still more glorious revelation in its restoration, yet restoration is and ever will be the salvation of that which was first created, the theodicy of the original handiwork of our God. The mediatorship of Christ is and ever will be the burden of the grand hymn of the tongues of men and the voices of angels, but even this mediatorship has for its final end the glory of the Father; and however grand the splendor of Christ's kingdom may be, He will



at last surrender it to God and the Father. He is still our advocate with the Father, but the hour is coming, when his prayer for us will cease, because we shall know, in that day, that the Father loves us. Thereby of course Calvinism puts an end once and for all to contempt for the world, neglect of temporal and under-valuation of cosmical things. Cosmical life has regained its worth not at the expense of things eternal, but by virtue of its capacity as God's handiwork and as a revelation of God's attributes.

Two facts may suffice to impress you with the truth of this. During the terrible plague, which once devastated Milan, Cardinal Borromeo's heroic love shone brightly in the courage he manifested in his ministrations to the dying; but during the plague, which in the 16<sup>th</sup> century tormented Geneva, Calvin acted better and more wisely, for he not only cared incessantly for the spiritual needs of the sick, but at the same time introduced hitherto unsurpassed hygienic measures, whereby the ravages of the plague were arrested. The second fact, to which I draw your attention, is not less remarkable. The Calvinistic preacher Peter Plancino of Amsterdam was an eloquent sermonizer, a pastor unrivalled in his consecration to his work, foremost in the ecclesiastical struggle of his days, but at the same time he was the oracle of shipowners and sea-captains on account of his extensive geographical knowledge. The investigation of the lines of longitude and latitude of the terrestrial globe formed in his estimation one whole with the investigation of the length and breadth of the love of Christ. He saw himself placed before two works of God, the one in creation, the other in Christ, and in both he adored that majesty of Almighty God, which transported his soul into ecstasy. In this light it is deserving of notice that our Belgic Confession speaks of two means, whereby we know God, *viz.* the Scriptures *and Nature*. And still more remarkable it is, that Calvin, instead of



simply treating Nature as an accessorial item, as so many Theologians were inclined to do, was accustomed to compare the Scriptures to a pair of spectacles, enabling us to decipher again the divine Thoughts, written by God's Hand in the book of *Nature*, which had become obliterated in consequence of sin. Thus vanished, every dread possibility, that he, who occupied himself with nature, were wasting his capacities in pursuit of vain and idle things. It was perceived, on the contrary that, for God's sake, our attention may not be withdrawn from the life of nature and creation; the study of the body regained its place of honor beside the study of the soul; and the social organization of mankind on earth was again looked upon as being as well worthy an object of human science as the congregation of the perfect saints in heaven. This also explains the close relation existing between Calvinism and Humanism. In as far as Humanism endeavored to substitute life in this world for the eternal, every Calvinist opposed the Humanist. But in as much as the Humanist contented himself with a plea for a proper acknowledgment of secular life, the Calvinist was his ally.

---

Now I proceed to consider the dogma of *common grace*, that natural outcome of the general principle, just presented to you, but in its special application to *sin*, understood as corruption of our nature. Sin places before us a riddle, which in itself is insoluble. If you view sin as a deadly poison, as enmity against God, as leading to everlasting condemnation, and if you represent a sinner as being "wholly incapable of doing any good, and prone to all evil," and on this account salvable only, if God by regeneration changes his heart, then it seems as if of necessity all unbelievers and unregenerate persons ought to be wicked and repulsive men. But this is far from being our experience in actual life. On the contrary



the unbelieving world excels in many things. Precious treasures have come down to us from the old heathen civilization. In Plato you find pages which you devour. Cicero fascinates you and bears you along by his noble tone and stirs up in you holy sentiments. And if you counsel your own surroundings, that which is reported to you, and that which you derive from the studies and literary productions of professed infidels, how much there is which attracts you, with which you sympathize and which you admire. It is not exclusively the spark of genius or the splendor of talent, which excites your pleasure in the words and actions of unbelievers, but it is often their beauty of character, their zeal, their devotion, their love, their candor, their faithfulness and their sense of honesty. Yea, we may not pass it over in silence, not unfrequently you entertain the desire, that certain believers might have more of this attractiveness, and who among us has not himself been put to the blush occasionally by being confronted with what is called the virtues of the heathen? It is thus a fact, that your dogma of total depravity by sin does not always tally with your experience in life. Yet, if you now run to the opposite direction and proceed from these experimental facts, you must not forget, that your entire Christian confession falls to the ground, for then you look upon human nature as good and incorrupt; the criminal villains have to be pitied as ethically-insane; regeneration is entirely superfluous in order to live honorably; and your imagination of higher grace seems to be nothing else than playing with a medicine, which often proves entirely ineffectual. True, some people save themselves from this awkward position by speaking of the virtues of unbelievers as "splendid vices", and, on the other hand, by charging the sins of believers to old Adam, yet you feel, yourselves, that this is a subterfuge, which lacks earnestness. Rome tried to find a better way of escape in the well known doctrine of the *pura naturalia*. Romanists





taught that there existed two spheres of life, the earthly or the human as such, here below, and the heavenly, higher than the human as such; the latter offering celestial enjoyments in the vision of God. Now, Adam according to this theory, was well prepared by God for both spheres, for the common sphere of life by the nature He gave him, and for the extra-common by granting him the supranatural gift of original righteousness. In this wise Adam was doubly furnished for the natural as well as the supranatural life. By the fall he lost the latter, not the former. His natural equipment for his earthly life remained unimpaired. It is true, human nature was weakened, but as a whole it remained in its integrity. Adam's natural endowments remained his possession after the fall. This explains why it is that fallen man often excels in the natural order of life, which is in fact *superhuman*. You perceive that this is a system which tries to reconcile the dogma of the fall with the real state of things round about us, and on this remarkable anthropology is founded the entire catholic religion. Two things only are faulty in this system, on the one hand it lacks the deep Scriptural conception of sin, and on the other it errs by the undervaluation of earthly life, to which it leads. This is the false dualism, to which my First Lecture pointed, in the carnival. At that time the world is once more fully enjoyed, before one enters upon the *Caro vale*, but after the Carnival, in order to save the ideal, follows, for a short time, spiritual elevation into the higher sphere of life. For this reason the clergy, severing the earthly tie in celibacy, rank higher than the laity, and again, the monk, who turns away from earthly possessions also and sacrifices his own will, stands, ethically considered, on a higher level than the clergy. And finally the highest perfection is reached by the stylite, who, mounting his pillar, severs himself from everything earthly, or by the yet more silent penitent who causes himself to be immured in his subterranean cave. Horizontally, if I may use this



expression, the same thought finds embodiment in the separation between sacred and secular ground. Everything uncountenanced and uncared for by the church, is looked upon as being of a lower character, and exorcism in baptism tells us, that these *lower* things are really meant to be unholy. Now, it is evident that such a standpoint did not invite Christians to make a study of earthly things. Nothing but a study appertaining to the sphere of heavenly things and contemplation could attract those who had mounted guard over the sanctuary of the ideal.

This conception of the moral condition of fallen man has been opposed in principle by Calvinism, on the one hand by taking our conception of sin in the most absolute sense, and on the other by explaining that which is good in fallen man by the dogma of *common grace*. Sin, according to Calvinism, which is in full accord with the Holy Scriptures, sin unbridled and unfettered, left to itself, would forthwith have led to a total degeneracy of human life, as may be inferred from what was seen in the days before the flood. But God arrested sin in its course in order to prevent the complete annihilation of his divine handiwork, which naturally would have followed. He has interfered in the life of the individual, in the life of mankind as a whole, and in the life of nature itself by His common grace. This grace however does not kill the core of sin, nor does it save unto life eternal, but it arrests the complete effectuation of sin, just as human insight arrests the fury of wild beasts. Man can prevent the beast from doing damage by putting it behind bars; he can subject it to his will by taming it; he can make it attractive by domesticating it, *e. g.*, by transforming the originally wild dog and cat into domestic animals. In a similar manner God by His common grace restrains the operation of sin in man, partly by breaking its power, partly by taming his evil spirit, and partly by domesticating his nation or his family. Common grace has thus led to the result that an ungenerated sinner may captivate and attract us by much that



is lovely and full of energy, just as our domestic animals do, but this of course after the manner of man. The nature of sin however remains as venomous as it was. This is seen in the cat, which, brought back to the woods, returns to its former wild state after two generations, and a similar experience has been made with regard to human nature, just now, in Armenia and Cuba. He who reads an account of the massacres of St. Bartholemew is easily inclined to place these horrors to the account of the low state of culture in those days, but behold! our nineteenth century has surpassed these horrors by the massacres in Armenia. And he who has read a description of the cruelties committed by the Spaniards in the 16<sup>th</sup> century in the villages and cities of the Netherlands against defenceless old men, women and children, and then heard the news of what occurred now in Cuba, cannot help acknowledging that, what was a disgrace in the 16<sup>th</sup>, has been repeated in the 19<sup>th</sup> century, and, as Buckle justly maintains, that the form of evil may change, but that moral evil in germ and principle, continues the same through all the ages. Where evil does not come to the surface, or does not manifest itself in all its hideousness, we do not owe it to the fact that our nature is not so deeply corrupt, but to God alone, Who by His common grace, hinders the bursting forth of the flames from the smoking fire. And if you ask, how it is possible, that out of restrained evil something may come forth which attracts, pleases and interests you, take then as an illustration the ferry-boat. This boat is put in motion by the current, which would carry it swiftly as an arrow down stream and ruin it; but by means of the chain, to which it is fastened, the boat arrives safely on the opposite side, pressed forward by the same power, which would otherwise have demolished it. In this wise God retains the evil and it is He who brings forth good out of evil, and meanwhile we Calvinists, never remiss in accusing our sinful nature, praise and thank God for making



it possible for men to dwell together in a well-ordered society, and for restraining us personally from horrible sins. Moreover we thank Him for bringing to light all the talents, hidden in our race, developing, by means of a regular process, the history of mankind, and securing by the same grace, for his church on earth, a place for the sole of her foot.

This confession, however, places the Christian in a quite different position over against life. For then, in his judgment, not only *the church*, but also *the world* belongs to God and in both has to be investigated the masterpiece of the supreme Architect and Artificer.

He who seeks God, does not for a moment think of limiting himself to theology and contemplation, leaving the other sciences, as of a lower character, in the hands of unbelievers; but on the contrary, looking upon it as his task, to know God in all his works, he is conscious of having been called to fathom with all the energy of his intellect, things *terrestrial* as well as things *heavenly*: to open to view both the order of creation, and the common grace of the God he adores, in nature and its wondrous character, in the production of human industry, in the life of mankind, in sociology and in the history of the human race. Thus you perceive, how this dogma of common grace suddenly removed the interdict, under which secular life had lain bound, at the peril of coming very near a reaction in favor of a one-sided love for these secular studies. It was now understood, that it was the common-grace of God, which had produced in ancient Greece and Rome the treasures of philosophic light, and disclosed to us treasures of art and justice, which kindled the love for classical studies, in order to renew to us the profit of so splendid an heritage. It was now clearly seen, that the history of mankind is not so much an aphoristic spectacle of cruel passions, as a coherent process with the Cross as its centre; a process in which every nation has its special task, and the knowledge of which may be a fountain of bles-





sing for every people. It was apprehended, that the science of politics and national economy deserved the careful attention of scholars and men of thought. Yea, it was intuitively conceived, that there was nothing either in the life of nature round about us, or in human life itself, which did not present itself as an object worthy of investigation, which might throw new light on the glories of the entire cosmos in its visible phenomena and its invisible operations. From on a different standpoint, progress in thorough scientific knowledge on these lines often leads to pride and estranges the heart from God, but we owe it to this glorious dogma of common grace that in Calvinistic circles the most profound investigator never ceases to acknowledge himself a guilty sinner before God, and to ascribe to God's mercy alone, his splendid understanding of the things of the world.

Having proved that Calvinism has fostered *love for science* and restored to science *its domain*, allow me now in the third place to show in what manner it has advanced its *indispensable liberty*. Liberty is for genuine science, what the air we breathe is for us. This does not mean that science is entirely untrammelled in the use of its liberty and need obey no laws. On the contrary, a fish lying on dry land is perfectly free *viz.*, to die and to perish while a fish, which shall be free to live and to thrive must be entirely surrounded by water and guided by its fins. In the same manner every science has to keep up the closest connection with its subject, and strictly to obey the claims of its proper method; and only when strictly bound by this double tie, can science move freely on. For the liberty of science does not consist in licentiousness or lawlessness, but in its being freed from all unnatural bonds, unnatural because they are not rooted in its vital principle. Now in order to fully understand the position Calvin took,



wo should abstain from any wrong conception of university-life in the middle ages. State universities were not known in those days. The universities were free corporations, and in so far prototypes of most of the universities in America, a condition of things, which we see revive in Europe in general, and happily also in the Netherlands, in the Free University, whose servant I am. It was the general opinion in those days, that science called into existence a *respublica litterarum*, "a commonwealth of learned men", which has to live upon its own spiritual capital or to die of lack of talent and energy. The encroachment upon the liberty of science in those days came not from the State but from an entirely different quarter. For ages two dominant powers, only, had been known in the life of mankind, the *Church* and the *State*. The dichotomy of body and soul was reflected in this view of life. The Church was the soul, the State the body; a third power was unknown. Church-life was centralized in the pope, while the political life of the nations found its point of union in the emperor, and it was the endeavor to resolve this dualism into a higher unity, that kindled the flames of the fierce struggle for the supremacy of the imperial crown or the papal tiara, as seen in the conflict between the Hohenstaufen and the Guelphs. Since then however science as a third power, thanks to the *Renaissance*, had pushed itself in between them. Before the thirteenth century elapsed Science had found in the rising university-life an embodiment of its own, and claimed an existence independent of pope and emperor. The only remaining question was, whether this new power also was to create an hierarchical center, in order to unveil itself as the third great potentate, at the side of the pope and the emperor. Here three positions were possible: 1°. that such a third hierarchy were created; 2°. that science continued to be without a central head; or 3°. that either pope or caesar usurped this place.

The first position soon proved to be impossible. On the



contrary the republican character of the university demanded the exclusion of all monarchical aspirations. But it was just as natural for pope and caesar, who had partitioned among themselves the entire domain of life, to watch with suspicion the growth of a third, entirely independent power, and to try everything in order to subject the universities to their rule. If all the then existing universities had taken a firm stand such a plan would never have succeeded. But as is often the case among free corporations, competition allured the weaker to seek support from without and to turn for help to the head of Christendom. This compelled the strong Universities to follow, and so the favor of the pope was soon universally coveted, in order to secure special privileges. Herein is found the fundamental evil. In this wise Science surrendered its independent character. It was overlooked, that the intellectual reception into, and the reflection from our consciousness, of the cosmos wherein all science consists, forms a sphere entirely different from Religion. Now this evil has been checked by the reformation, and mastered especially by Calvinism. Formally mastered, because in the Church itself the monarchical hierarchy was abandoned, and under the monarchical authority of Christ a republican and federal organisation was introduced. A spiritual Church head, whose task it would be, to rule over universities, no longer existed for a Calvinist. For Lutherans such a visible head was at hand in the ruler of the land, whom they honored as "first Bishop", *summus episcopus*, but not for Calvinistic nations, which kept Church and State separate as two spheres of life. A doctor's diploma, in their system, might not derive its significance from public opinion neither from papal consent nor from an ecclesiastical ordinance, but solely from the scientific character of the institution.

To this must be added a second point. Without regarding the papal auspices over the University as such, the Church exercised pressure upon Science by harassing, accusing and persecuting the innovators on account of their expressed



opinions and published writings. The Church did not tolerate freedom of the word. Truth alone, not error had the right to propagate itself, and truth was expected to keep its ground, not by conquering error in honest conflict, but by arraigning it at the bar of justice. This impaired the liberty of Science, because it submitted scientific questions, which could not be settled by ecclesiastical jurisdiction, to the judgment of the Church. He who shrunk from conflicts, kept silence or submitted to circumstances, and he, who, being of more heroic mettle, defied opposition, was punished by having his wings clipped; and if he nevertheless tried to fly with clipped wings, had his neck wrung. He who published a book, betraying too bold opinions, was considered a criminal, and came at last in contact with the inquisition and the scaffold. The right of free inquiry was unknown. Firmly believing, that everything knowable and worthy of being known, was known already, and known firmly and well, the church in those days had no idea of the immense task, reserved for science, just awaking from its mediaeval slumber, nor of the "struggle for life," which was to be the indispensable rule in the execution of its task. The church was unable to hail, in the dawn of science, a rosy morn, heralding to the horizon the rising of a new sun, but saw in its glittering rather the smouldering sparks, which threatened to set the world on fire, and therefore considered herself justified and in duty bound to quench this fire and to extinguish these flames wherever an outbreak occurred. This position, placing ourselves back in those times, we can understand, but not without firmly condemning its underlying principle, for it would have smothered nascent science in its very cradle, if all the world had persisted in favoring it. Glory, therefore, to Calvinism which first of all abandoned this pernicious position with effectual results; theoretically by its discovery of the sphere of common grace, and, before long, practically, by offering a safe harbor to all who were caught in a storm





elsewhere. It is true, Calvinism, as always happens in such cases, did by no means immediately understand the full bearing of its opposition, for it began by writing the same duty to extirpate error, in its own code, and yet the invincible idea, which was bound to lead and in the course of time has led to freedom of the word, found its absolute expression in the principle, that the Church has to retire to the domain of particular grace, and that exempted from her rule lies the wide and free domain of common grace. The result of this was that the penalties of criminal law were gradually reduced to a dead letter, and that, to instance only one case, Des Cartes, who had to leave Roman Catholic France, found among the Calvinists of the Netherlands, of course a scientific antagonist in Voetius, but in the republic a safe retreat.

To this I must add that in order to cause science to flourish *a demand for science* had to be created, and to that end the public mind had to be made free. As long however as the Church stretched out her *velum* over the entire drama of public life, the state of bondage naturally continued, because the only object of life was to merit heaven and to enjoy as much of the world as the church considered to be consistent with this main end. From this point of view it was unimaginable, that any one should be willing to devote himself with sympathy and seeking love to the study of Nature. The seeking love of all was directed towards eternal life, and it could not be realized that Christianity, besides its yearning for eternal salvation, has to perform on earth, by divine commission, a grand task with regard to the cosmos. It was this conception, which Calvinism eradicated, cutting down at the root in the most absolute sense, every idea, that life on earth were ever destined to merit the blessedness of heaven. This blessedness, for every true Calvinist, grows out of regeneration, and sealed by the perseverance of the saints. Where in this manner the assurance of faith supplanted the traffic



of indulgences, Calvinism called Christendom back to the order of creation: "Replenish the earth, subdue it and have dominion over everything that lives upon it." Christian life as a pilgrimage was not changed, but the Calvinist became a pilgrim, who, while on his way to our eternal home, had yet to perform on earth an important task. The cosmos, in all the wealth of the kingdom of nature, was spread out before, under and above man. This entire limitless field had to be worked. To this labor the Calvinist consecrated himself with enthusiasm and energy. For the earth with all that is in it, had, according to God's Will, to be subjected to man. Thus flourished, in those days, in my native country, agriculture and industry, commerce and navigation. This new-born national life awakened new needs. In order to subdue the earth, a knowledge of the earth was indispensable, knowledge of its oceans, of its nature, and of the attributes and laws of this nature. And so it came to pass that the people itself, who had until now refrained from encouraging science, by a new and sparkling energy, suddenly called it into action, rousing it from its slumbers, and spurring it on to a sense of liberty, hitherto entirely unknown.

---

And now I approach my last point, *viz.*, the assertion, that the emancipation of Science must inevitably lead to a sharp *conflict of principles*, and that, for this conflict, also, Calvinism alone offered *the ready solution*. You understand, which conflict I have in view. Free investigation leads to collisions. One draws the lines on the map of life differently from his neighbor. The result is the origin of schools and tendencies. Optimists and pessimists. A school of Kant, and a school of Hegel. Among jurists the determinists oppose the moralists. Among medical men the homoeopaths oppose the allopaths. Platonists and Neptunists, Darwinists and anti-Darwinists compete with one



another in the natural sciences. Wilhelm van Humboldt, Jacob Grimm and Max Mueller form different schools in the domain of language. Formalists and realists pick quarrels with one another within the classical walls of the philological temple. Everywhere contention, conflict, struggle, sometimes vehement and keen, not seldom mixed with personal asperity. And yet, although the energy of the difference of principle lies at the root of all these disputes, these subordinate conflicts are entirely put in the shade by the principal conflict, which in all countries perplexes the mind most vehemently, the powerful conflict between those who cling to the confession of the triune God and His Word, and those who seek the solution of the world-problem in Deism, Pantheism and Naturalism. Notice, that I do not speak of a conflict between faith and science. Such a conflict does not exist. Every science in a certain degree starts from faith, and, on the contrary, faith, which does not lead to science, is mistaken faith or superstition, but real, genuine faith it is not. Every science presupposes faith in self, in our self-consciousness; presupposes faith in the accurate working of our senses; presupposes faith in the correctness of the laws of thought; presupposes faith in something universal hidden behind the special phenomena; presupposes faith in life; and especially presupposes faith in the principles, from which we proceed; which signifies, that all these indispensable axioms, needed in a productive scientific investigation, do not come to us by proof, but are established in our judgment by our inner conception and given with our self-consciousness. On the other hand every kind of faith has in itself an impulse to speak out. In order to do this it needs words, terms, expressions. These words must be the embodiment of thoughts. Those thoughts must be connected reciprocally not only with themselves but also with our surroundings, with time and eternity, and as soon as faith thus beams forth in our consciousness, the need of science and demon-



stration is born. Hence it follows, that the conflict is, not between faith and science, but between the assertion, that the cosmos, as it exists to-day is either in a *normal* or *abnormal* condition. If it is *normal*, then it moves by means of an eternal process from its potencies to its ideal. But if the cosmos in its present condition is *abnormal*, then a disturbance has taken place, and only a regenerating power can warrant it the final attainment of its goal. This, and no other is the principal antithesis, which separates the thinking minds in the domain of Science into two opposite battle-arrays.

The *Normalists* refuse to reckon with other than natural data, do not rest until they have found an identical interpretation of all phenomena, and oppose with the utmost vigor, at every turn of the line, all attempts to break or to check the logical inferences of cause and effect. Therefore, they also honour faith in a *formal* sense but only as far as it remains in harmony with the general data of the human consciousness and this be considered as normal. *Materially* however they reject the very idea of creation, and can only accept evolution,—an evolution without a point of departure in the Past, and eternally evolving itself in the future, until lost in the boundless Infinite. No species, not even the species *Homo sapiens*, originated as such, but within the circle of natural data developed out of lower and preceding forms of life. Especially no miracles, but instead of them the natural law, dominating in an inexorable manner. No sin, but evolution from a lower to a higher moral position. If they tolerate the Holy Scriptures at all, they do it on condition that all those parts, which cannot be logically explained as a human production be excised. A Christ, if necessary, but such a one as is the product of the human development of Israel. And in the same manner a God, or rather a supreme Being, but after the manner of the Agnostics, concealed behind the visible Universe, or pantheistically hiding in all existing things,





and conceived of as the ideal reflection of the human mind.

The Abnormalists, on the other hand, who do justice to relative evolution, but adhere to creation over against an *evolutio in infinitum*, oppose the position of the Normalists with all their might; they maintain inexorably the conception of man as an independent species, because in him is reflected the image of God; they conceive of sin as the destruction of the unsinful human origin, and consequently as rebellion against God; and for that reason they postulate and maintain the miraculous as the only means to restore the abnormal; the miracle of regeneration; the miracle in the Scriptures; the miracle in the Christ, descending as God with his own life into ours; and thus, owing to this regeneration of the abnormal, they continue to find the ideal norm not in the natural but in the Triune God.

Not faith and science therefore, but *two scientific systems* or if you choose, two scientific elaborations, are opposed to each other, *each having its own faith*. Nor may it be said that it is here science which opposes *theology*, for we have to do with two absolute forms of science, *both* of which claim the whole domain of human knowledge, and both of which have a theology of their own as the point of departure for their world-view. Pantheism as well as Deism is a theological system and without reserve the entire modern theology finds its home in the science of the Normalists. And finally they are not relative opponents, walking together half way, and, further on, peaceably suffering one another to choose different paths, but they are both in earnest, disputing with one another *the whole domain of life*, and they cannot desist from the constant endeavor to pull down to the ground *the entire edifice* of their respective controverted assertions, all the supports included, upon which their assertions rest. If they did not try this, they would thereby show on both sides, that they did not honestly believe in their starting-point, and that they were no serious combatants, and that they, did not understand the primordial



demand of science, which of course claims *unity of conception*.

A Normalist, who retains in his system the slightest possibility of creation, of a specific image of God in man, of sin as a fall, of Christ in so far as he transcends the human, of regeneration, as different from evolution, of the Scriptures, as bringing us real oracles of God; is an amphibious scholar and forfeits the name of scientist. But on the other side, he, who, as Abnormalist, transforms creation to a certain extent into evolution; who does not see in the animal a creature, made in the image of man, but men's origin; who surrenders the creation of man in original righteousness; and who moreover tries every way, to explain regeneration, Christ, and the Scriptures as the result of merely human causes, instead of clinging with all the energy of his soul to the Divine cause, as dominating in all this over all human data, must as decidedly be banished from our ranks as an amphibious and unscientific man. The *normal* and the *abnormal* are two absolutely differing starting-points, which have nothing in common in their origin. Parallel lines never intersect. You have to choose either the one or the other, but whatever you may choose, whatever you are as a scientific man, you have to be it consistently, not only in the faculty of theology, but in all faculties; in your entire world and life-view; in the full reflection of the whole world-picture from the mirror of your human consciousness.

Chronologically, it is true, we Abnormalists, for many ages in succession, have been the speakers, hardly ever having been challenged, while our opponents have had no opportunity to dispute our principles. With the decay of the old heathen, and the rise of the Christian world-view, the conviction soon took deep root, that everything has been created by God, that the species of beings have been brought into existence by special creative acts, and that among these species of beings man has been created as image-bearer of God in original righteousness; further, that the original



point for every scientist, then the logical conclusion is, that it is an impossibility, that both should agree, and that every endeavor to make them agree must be doomed to failure. Both, as honest men, will feel duty bound to erect such a scientific edifice for the whole cosmos, which is in harmony with the fundamental data, given in their own self-consciousness.

You perceive immediately how radical and fundamental this Calvinistic solution of the perplexing problem is; Science is not undervalued or pushed aside, but postulated for the cosmos as a whole and all its parts. The claim is maintained, that your science has to form a complete whole. And the difference between the science of the Normalists and Abnormalists is not founded upon any differing result of investigation, but upon the undeniable difference, which distinguishes the self-consciousness of the one from that of the other. Free science is the stronghold we defend against the attack of her tyrannical twin-sister. The Normalist tries to do us violence even in our own consciousness. He tells us, that our self-consciousness must needs be uniform with his own, and that every thing else we imagine we find in ours, stands condemned as self-delusion. In other words, the Normalist wishes to wrest from us the very thing, which, in our self-consciousness, is the highest and holiest gift, for which a continual stream of gratitude wells up from our hearts to God; he calls a lie in our own souls that which is more precious and certain to us than our life. With royal pride our consciousness of faith, and the indignation of our heart rise up against all this. We resign ourselves to the fate of being slighted and oppressed in the world, but we refuse to be dictated to by any one in the sanctuary of our heart. We do not assail the liberty of the Normalist to build a well construed science from the premises of his own consciousness, but our right and liberty to do the same thing we are determined to defend, if needs be, at any cost.



for a moment surely, public opinion was stupefied with sudden fright, but since the mass of the people lacked personal faith, this superficial reluctance was only of short duration. Within a quarter of a century the life-view of the Normalists had conquered in a literal sense the world in its leading centre. And only he, who adhered to the abnormalist view by virtue of his personal faith, refused to join in the chorus of those, who sang the praises of "modern thought", and at the first brunt, felt inclined to anathematize all science, retiring to the tent of mysticism. It is true, for a short time theologians tried to defend their cause apologetically, but this defense might be compared to a man who tries to adjust a crooked window-frame, while he is unconscious of the fact that the building is tottering on its foundations. This is the reason, why the abler theologians, especially in Germany, imagined, that the best thing to do would be to avail themselves of one or the other of these philosophical systems as a prop to sustain Christianity. The first result of this mixture of philosophy and theology was the so-called mediating theology, which gradually became poorer and poorer in its theological, richer and richer in its philosophical part, until at last modern theology lifted up its head and found its glory in the attempt, to cleanse theology of its abnormal character in such a thorough manner, that Christ was transformed into a man, born as we are born, who was not even entirely free of sin, and the Holy Scriptures into a collection of writings, for the most part pseudepigraphic and in every possible manner interpolated and filled with myths, legends and fables. The song of the Psalmist: "We see not our signs; they have set up their ensigns for signs", has been literally fulfilled by them. Christ and the Scriptures included, every sign of the abnormal was rooted out, and the sign of the normal process embraced as the only genuine criterion of truth. In this result, I repeat what I have already stated, there is nothing to surprise us. He, who subjectively looks





upon his inner being and objectively upon the world around him as normal, *cannot* but speak as he does, *cannot* reach a different result, would be insincere in his position as a scientific man, if he were to represent things in a different light. And therefore from a moral point of view, not thinking for a moment of such a man's responsibility in the judgment of God, nothing can be said against his personal stand-point, provided that, thinking as he does, he shows the courage, to voluntarily leave the Christian church in all its denominations.

If the character of the keen and unavoidable conflict is thus and not otherwise, behold then the unconquerable position which Calvinism points out to us in the strain and struggle, resulting from this conflict. It does not keep itself busy with useless apologetics; it does not turn the great battle into a skirmish about one of the outworks, but immediately goes back to human consciousness, from which the man of science has to proceed as *his* consciousness. This consciousness, just on account of the abnormal character of things, is not the same in all. If the normal condition of things had not been broken, consciousness would emit the same sound from all: but as a matter of fact, this is not the case. In the one the *consciousness of sin* is very powerful and strong, in the other it is either feeble or entirely wanting. In the one the *assurance of faith* speaks with decision and clearness as a result of regeneration, the other does not even understand what it is. So also in the one the *Testimonium Spiritus Sancti* resounds loudly and in tones firm and strong, while the other declares, that he has never yet heard its testimony. Now, these three, consciousness of sin, assurance of faith and the testimony of the Holy Spirit, are constituent elements in the consciousness of every Calvinist. They form its immediate contents. Without these three self-consciousness does not exist with him. This the Normalist disapproves, and, therefore, he



tries to force his consciousness upon us, and claims, that our consciousness has to be identical with his. From his point of view nothing else could be expected. For if he conceded that there might be a real difference between his consciousness and ours, he would thereby have admitted a break in the normal condition of things. We, on the contrary, do not claim, that our consciousness shall be found in him. It is true, Calvin maintains, that there is hidden in the heart of every man a "religious seed,"— *semen religionis*, and that the "God-feeling",— *sensus divinitatis*, confessed or unconfessed, in moments of intense mental strain, causes the soul to tremble, but it is no less true, that it is just his system, which teaches that human consciousness in a man who believes and in a man who disbelieves, cannot agree, but that on the contrary disagreement is inevitable. He, who is not born again, cannot have a substantial knowledge of sin, and he, who is not converted, cannot possess assurance of faith; he who lacks the *Testimonium Spiritus Sancti*, cannot believe in the Holy Scriptures, and all this according to the thrilling saying of Christ himself: "Except a man be born again, he *cannot see* the kingdom of God"; and also according to the saying of the apostle: "The natural man *receiveth not* the things of the spirit of God." Calvin however does not excuse unbelievers on this account. The day will come, when they will be convinced in their own conscience. But with regard to the present condition of things we, of course, have to acknowledge two kinds of human consciousness: that of the regenerate and the unregenerate; and these two cannot be identical. In the one is found what is lacking in the other. The one is unconscious of a break and clings accordingly to the normal; the other has an experience both of a break and of a change, and thus possesses in his consciousness the knowledge of the abnormal. If, therefore, it be true that man's own consciousness is his *primum-verum*, and hence must be also the starting-



point for every scientist, then the logical conclusion is, that it is an impossibility, that both should agree, and that every endeavor to make them agree must be doomed to failure. Both, as honest men, will feel duty bound to erect such a scientific edifice for the whole cosmos, which is in harmony with the fundamental data, given in their own self-consciousness.

You perceive immediately how radical and fundamental this Calvinistic solution of the perplexing problem is: Science is not undervalued or pushed aside, but postulated for the cosmos as a whole and all its parts. The claim is maintained, that your science has to form a complete whole. And the difference between the science of the Normalists and Abnormalists is not founded upon any differing result of investigation, but upon the undeniable difference, which distinguishes the self-consciousness of the one from that of the other. Free science is the stronghold we defend against the attack of her tyrannical twin-sister. The Normalist tries to do us violence even in our own consciousness. He tells us, that our self-consciousness must needs be uniform with his own, and that every thing else we imagine we find in ours, stands condemned as self-delusion. In other words, the Normalist wishes to wrest from us the very thing, which, in our self-consciousness, is the highest and holiest gift, for which a continual stream of gratitude wells up from our hearts to God; he calls a lie in our own souls that which is more precious and certain to us than our life. With royal pride our consciousness of faith, and the indignation of our heart rise up against all this. We resign ourselves to the fate of being slighted and oppressed in the world, but we refuse to be dictated to by any one in the sanctuary of our heart. We do not assail the liberty of the Normalist to build a well construed science from the premises of his own consciousness, but our right and liberty to do the same thing we are determined to defend, if needs be, at any cost.



The parts are now exchanged. Not so very long ago the principal positions of Abnormalism were looked upon as axioms for all sciences in almost all universities, and the few Normalists, who at that time opposed the principle of their antagonists, found it difficult to find rest for the sole of their foot. First they were persecuted, then outlawed, after that at the most tolerated. But at present they are the masters of the situation, control all influence, fill ninety per cent of all professorial chairs, and the result is, that the Abnormalist, who has been forced out of the official house, is now obliged to look for a place, where he may lay down his head. Formerly we showed them the door, and now this sinful assault upon their liberty is by God's righteous judgment avenged by their turning us out into the street, and so it becomes the question, if the courage, the perseverance, the energy, which enabled them to win their suit at last, will be found now in a still higher degree, with Christian scholars. May God grant it! You cannot, nay, you even may not think of it, deprive him, whose consciousness differs from yours, of freedom of thought, of speech and of the press. That they, from their standpoint pull down everything that is holy in your estimation, is unavoidable. Instead of seeking relief for your scientific conscience in downhearted complaints, or in mystic feeling, or in unconfessional work, the energy and the thoroughness of our antagonists must be felt by every Christian scholar as a sharp incentive always to go back to principles in his thinking, to renew all scientific investigation on the lines of these principles, and to glut the press with the burden of his cogent studies. If we console ourselves with the thought, that we may without danger leave secular science in the hands of our opponents, if we only succeed in saving theology, ours will be the tactics of the ostrich. To confine yourself to the saving of your upper room, when the rest of the house is on fire, is foolish indeed. Calvin long ago knew better, when he asked for a *Philosophia Christiana*,





and after all every faculty, and in these faculties every single science, is more or less connected with the antithesis of principles, and should consequently be permeated by it. As little may you seek your safety in shutting your eyes to the actual conditions of things, wherein so many Christians imagine they find a safe shield. Everything astronomers or geologists, physicists or chemists, zoologists or bacteriologists, historians or archeologists bring to light has to be recorded, detached of course from the hypothesis they have slipped behind it, and from the conclusions they have drawn from it; but every fact has to be recorded by you, also, as a fact, and as a fact that is to be incorporated as well in your science as in theirs.

In order however to make this possible, university-life has to be subjected to a radical change. Until now university-life presumed, that science grew up only from one homogeneous human consciousness, and that nothing but learning and ability determined whether you might claim a professorial chair or not. No-one thought of two lines of universities, opposed to one another on account of radical difference of principle. Since however the world-wide conflict between the Normalists and Abnormalists broke out in full force, the need of a division of university-life began to be felt more generally on both sides. The first in the field were, (I speak only of Europe), the unbelieving Normalists, who founded the Université Libre of Brussels. Before this in the same Belgium the Roman Catholic university of Louvain, in virtue of old traditions, had been placed in opposition to the neutral-universities of Liege and Ghent. In Switzerland a university arose at Freiburg, renowned, although yet young, as an embodiment of the Catholic principle. In Great Britain the same principle is followed in Dublin. In France, Catholic faculties are pitted against the faculties of the State institutions. And also in the Netherlands Amsterdam saw the birth of the Free University, for the



general cultivation of the sciences on the foundation of the Calvinistic principle.

If now, according to the demands of Calvinism, Church and State withdraw, I do not say their liberal gifts, but their high authority, from *university-life*, in order that the university may be allowed to take root and flourish in its own soil, then certainly the division, which is already begun, will be accomplished of itself and undisturbed, and in this domain also it will be seen, that only a peaceful separation of the adherents of antithetic principles warrants progress,—honest progress,—and mutual understanding. We here call upon History as our witness. First, the emperors of Rome tried to realize the false idea of *one State*, but the division of their universal monarchy into a multitude of independent nations was needed, to develop the hidden powers of Europe. After the fall of the Roman Empire, Europe yielded to the enchantment of *one world-Church*, until the reformation dispelled this delusion, also, thus opening the way for a higher development of Christian life. Nowhere else is this as clearly seen as in the United States of America, where denominational multiformity gave a separate Church-embodiment to every differentiation of principle. In the idea of *one Science* only, the old curse of uniformity is yet maintained; but of this also it may be prophesied, that the days of its artificial unity are numbered, and in this domain also at last the Catholic, the Calvinistic and the Evolutional principles will cause to spring up different spheres of scientific life, which will flourish in a multiformity of universities. We must have systems in science, coherence in instruction, unity in education. That is only really free, which, while it is strictly bound to its own principle, has the power to free itself from all unnatural bonds. The final result, therefore, will be, thanks to Calvinism, which has opened for us the way, that liberty of science will also triumph at last; first by guaranteeing full power to every leading world-view, to reap a scientific



harvest from its own principle;—and secondly, by refusing the scientific name to whatsoever investigator dare not unroll the colours of his own banner, and does not show emblazoned on his escutcheon in letters of gold the very principle, for which he lives, and from which his conclusions derive their power.



Transcribed by Rev. J. H. de Vries

## FIFTH LECTURE.

### CALVINISM AND ART.

In this fifth lecture, which is the last but one, I speak of *Calvinism and Art*.

It is not the prevailing tendency of the day that induces me to do this. Genuflection before an almost fanatical worship of art, such as our time fosters, should little harmonize with the high seriousness of life, for which Calvinism has pleaded, and which it has sealed, not with the pencil or chisel in the *studio*, but with its best blood at the stake and in the field of battle. Moreover the love of art which is so broadly on the increase in our times, should not blind our eyes, but ought to be soberly and critically examined. It presents the fact, which is in every way explainable, that artistic refinement, thus far restricted to a few favored circles, now tends to gain ground among broader middle classes, occasionally even betraying its inclination to descend to the widest strata of lower society. It is the democratizing, if you like, of a life-utterance which hitherto recommended itself by its aristocratic allurements. And though the really inspired artist may complain that, with the majority, piano-playing is mere strumming, and painting little more than daubing,





yet, the exuberant feeling of having a share in the privileges of art is so overwhelming, that the scorn of the artist is preferred to the abandonment of art-training in education. To have laid a production of your own, however poor, upon the altar of art becomes more and more the characteristic of an accomplished civilization. Finally, in all this the desire of enjoyment through ear and eye expresses itself, especially by means of music and of the stage. And if it cannot be denied that many court these sensual pleasures in ways that are less noble and too often sinful, it is equally certain, that in many instances this love of art leads men to seek enjoyment in nobler directions and lessens the appetite for lower sensuality. Especially in our great cities, stage-managers are able to provide such first-rate entertainments, and the easy means of communication between the nations imparts such an international character to our best singers and players, that the finest artistic enjoyments are now brought for almost no price within the reach of an ever-widening class. Besides, it is but fair to concede that, threatened with atrophy by materialism and rationalism, the human heart naturally seeks an antidote against this withering process, in its artistic instinct. Unchecked, the dominating influences of money and of barren intellectualism would reduce the life of the emotions to freezing-point. And, unable to grasp the holier benefits of religion, the mysticism of the heart reacts in an art-intoxication. Hence, though I do not forget that the real genius of art seeks the heights of isolation rather than the plains below, and that our age, so poor in the production of real creative art, is deemed to warm itself at the splendid glow of the past; yea, though I admit, that the homage of art by the profanum vulgus must necessarily lead to art-corruption, nevertheless, in my estimation, even the most injudicious aesthetical fanaticism stands far higher than the common race for wealth, or barren intellectualism, or an unholy prostration before the shrines of Bacchus and



Venus. In this cold, irreligious and practical age the warmth of this devotion to art has kept alive many higher aspirations of our soul, which otherwise might readily have died, as they did in the middle of the last century. Thus you see, I do not underestimate the present aesthetical movement. But what in the light of History should be discountenanced, is the mad endeavor to place it higher than, or even to make it of equal value with the religious movement of the 16<sup>th</sup> century, yet this is what I should be doing if I begged for Calvinism the favor of this new artistic movement. And therefore, when I plead the significance of Calvinism in the domain of art, I am not in the least induced to do so by this vulgarization of art, but rather keep my eyes fixed upon the Beautiful in its eternal significance, and upon art as one of the richest gifts of God to mankind.

Here, however, every student of history knows that I founder upon a deeply-rooted prejudice. Calvin, it is said, was personally devoid of the artistic instinct, and Calvinism which in the Netherlands proved guilty of Iconoclasm, cannot but be incapable either of artistic development or of real, noteworthy art-production. A brief word therefore about this strong prejudice is here in order. Without putting too high an estimate upon his: "Wer nicht liebt Weib, Wein und Gesang," it is beyond dispute that Luther was more artistically disposed than Calvin; but what does this prove? Will you deny Hellenism its artistic laurels because, devoid of all sense of the beautiful, Socrates boasted of the beauty of his gaint nose because it allowed his breath to pass more freely? Do the writings of John, Peter and Paul, the three pillars of the Christian Church, in a single word betray any special appreciation of artistic life? Yea, be it asked reverently, is there any instance, in the Gospels, of Christ ever pleading for art or ever seeking its enjoyment? And when these questions one by one, must be answered in



the negative, have you therefore the right to deny the fact that Christianity as such has been of an almost invaluable significance to the development of art? And if not, why then would you accuse Calvinism of Vandalism on the mere ground that Calvin personally had little feeling for art and that in his writings he had so little to say about it? And when you speak of the iconoclasm of the Beggars, should you forget that in the 8<sup>th</sup> century in the midst of the artistic and beautiful Grecian world the manly spirit of Leo Isaurus instigated a still more violent iconoclasm? and should the honour be denied to Byzantinism of having produced the finest monuments? Do you ask for still further proof to the contrary? Well, more sharply even than Leo Isaurus in the 8<sup>th</sup> century or Netherland's Beggars in the 16<sup>th</sup> century, did Mahomed in his Khorân militate against images of all kinds, but will this justify the charge that the Alhambra in Grenada and the Alcazar at Seville are no wonderfully beautiful products of architectural art? Ah, there is no progress in such dull reasoning as this.

We must not forget that the artistic instinct is an *universal* human phenomenon, but that in connection with national types, climates and countries, the development of that artistic instinct is most unequally divided among the nations. Who will look for a development of art in Iceland, and who on the other hand will not scent it, if I may so express myself, amidst the luxury of nature in the Levant? Is it then a matter of surprise that the South of Europe was more favorable for the development of this artistic instinct than the North? And when History shows that Calvinism was most widely received by the peoples of the North, does it prove aught against Calvinism, that in nations, living in a colder climate and of poorer natural surroundings, it was not able to quicken an artistic life such as flourished among the Southern nations? Because Calvinism preferred a worship of God in spirit and in



truth, to sacerdotal wealth, it has been accused by Rome of being devoid of an appreciation of art, and because it disapproved of a woman debasing herself as an artist's model or casting away her honor in the ballet, its moral seriousness has clashed with the sensualism of those who deemed no sacrifice too sacred for the Goddess of Art. All this however concerns only the place which art has to occupy in the sphere of life, and the boundaries of its domain, but does not touch art itself. To view therefore from a higher platform the significance of Calvinism to art, follow me in the investigation of these three points: 1. why Calvinism was not allowed to develop *an art-style of its own*; 2. what flows from its principle for *the nature of art*; and 3. what it has actually done for *its advancement*.

---

All would be well, if only Calvinism had developed an art-style of its own. Just as the Parthenon is boasted of at Athens, the Pantheon at Rome, the Saint Sophia at Byzantium, the Cathedral at Cologne, or the Saint Peter's at the Vatican, so also ought Calvinism to be able to exhibit an impressive structure, embodying all the fulness of its ideal. And that it did not do this is considered sufficient proof of its artistic poverty. Of course Calvinism is understood as having tried to ascend to the same artistic luxury, but is censured as having proved unable to accomplish it: its barren inflexibility being the obstacle that prevented every higher aesthetical development. And when the humanist boasts of the classic art of old Hellas, the Greek Church of the Byzantian, and Rome of its Gothic style, then Calvinism is looked upon as standing confused in their presence, perplexed by the painful charge of having lessened the fulness of human life. Now in opposition to this thoroughly unfair accusation, I maintain, that for the very reason of its higher principle Calvinism was not permitted to develop





such an art-style of its own. I was bound in this connection to put architecture to the front, because both in classic and in so-called Christian art the absolute and all-embracing production of art was exhibited in architecture, all the other departments of art finally adapting themselves to the temple, church, mosque or pagoda. Scarcely a single art-style can be mentioned which did not arise from the centre of divine worship and which did not seek the realization of its ideals in the sumptuous structure for that worship. This was the thriving of an impulse which in itself was noble. Art derived her richest motives from Religion. The religious passion was the gold-mine, which financially rendered her boldest conceptions possible. For the realisation of her conceptions in this holy domain she found not only the narrow circle of artlovers, but also the whole nation at her feet. Divine worship furnished the tie that united the separated arts. And what tells more still, by this connexion with the Eternal, art received its inner unity and its ideal consecration. And this explains the fact that, whatever the palace and the stage may have done for the development of art, it was always the sanctuary by which it was impressed with the stamp of a special character and to which it was indebted for a creative style. Art-style and the style of worship coincided. Now of course, if this wedding of art-inspired worship, with worship-inspired art be no intermediate stage, but the real and the highest end to be obtained, then it must frankly be confessed that Calvinism cannot but plead guilty. If, however, on the other hand, it can be shown that this alliance of religion and art represents a lower stage of religious, and in general of human development, then it is plain, that in this very want of a special art-style, Calvinism finds an even higher recommendation. Being fully convinced in my own mind that this is the case, I proceed to account for my conviction.

The aesthetic development of divine worship carried to



those ideal heights of which the Parthenon and the Pantheon, the Saint Sophia and Saint Peter are the stone-embroidered witnesses, is only possible at that lower stage of progress in which the same form of religion is imposed upon a whole nation, both by prince and priest. In that case every difference of spiritual expression fuses into one mode of symbolical worship, and this union of the masses, under the leadership of the magistrate and the clergy, furnishes the possibility of defraying the immense expense of such colossal structures, and of ornamenting and decorating them. In the case however of a progressive development of the nations, when individual character-traits split the unity of the masses. Religion also rises to that higher plain where it graduates from the symbolical into the clearly-conscious life, and thereby necessitates both the division of worship into many forms, and the emancipation of matured religion from all sacerdotal and political guardianship. In the 16th century Europe was approaching, though slowly, this higher level of spiritual development, and it was not Lutheranism with its subjection of the whole nation to the religion of the prince, but Calvinism with its profound conception of religious liberty, which initiated the transition. In every country where Calvinism has made its appearance, it has led to a multiformity of life-tendencies, it has broken the power of the State within the domain of religion, and to a great extent has made an end of sacerdotalism. As a result of this, it abandoned the symbolical form of worship, and refused, at the demand of art, to embody its religious spirit in monuments of splendor.

The objection that such a symbolic service had a place in Israel does not weaken my argument, it rather supports it. For does not the New Testament teach us that the ministry of shadows, naturally flourishing under the old dispensation, under the dispensation of fulfilled prophecy is "old and waxeth aged and is nigh unto vanishing away?" In Israel we find a state-religion, which is one and the same for the entire



people. That religion is under sacerdotal leadership. And finally it makes its appearance in symbols, and is consequently embodied in the splendid temple of Solomon. But when this ministry of shadows has served the purposes of the Lord, Christ comes to prophecy the hour when God shall no longer be worshipped in the monumental temple at Jerusalem, but shall rather be worshipped in spirit and in truth. And in keeping with this prophecy you find no trace or shadow of art for worship in all the apostolic literature. Aaron's visible priesthood on earth gives place to the invisible High-priesthood after the order of Melchizedek in Heaven. The purely spiritual breaks through the nebula of the symbolical.

My second proof is that this agrees entirely with the higher relation between *Religion* and *Art*. Here I appeal to Hegel and Von Hartmann who, both standing outside Calvinism, may be relied upon as being disinterested witnesses. Hegel says that art, which, at a lower stage of development, imparts to a still sensual religion its highest expression and animation, finally helps it by these very means to cast off the fetters of sensuality; for though it must be granted that at a lower level it is only the aesthetical worship that liberates the spirit, nevertheless, he concludes, "beautiful art is not its highest emancipation," for that is only found in the realm of the invisible and spiritual. And Von Hartmann even more emphatically declares that: Originally Divine worship appeared inseparably united to art, because, at the lower stage, Religion is still inclined to lose itself in the aesthetic form. At that period, all the arts engage in the service of the cult, not merely music, painting, sculpture and architecture, but also the dance, mimicry and the drama. The more, on the other hand, Religion develops into spiritual maturity, the more it will extricate itself from art's bandages, because art always remains incapable of expressing the very essence of Religion.



And the final result of this historic process of separation must be, that Religion, when fully matured, will rather entirely abstain from the stimulant by which aesthetic pseudo-emotion intoxicated it, in order to concentrate itself wholly and exclusively upon the quickening of those emotions which are *purely religious*." And both Hegel and Von Hartmann are correct in this fundamental thought. Religion and Art have each a life-sphere of their own; these may at first be scarcely distinguishable from each other and therefore closely intertwined, but, with a richer development, these two spheres necessarily separate. Looking at two babies in a cradle you can scarcely tell which is boy or girl, but when, having reached the years of maturity, they stand before you, as man and woman, you see them both with forms, and traits, and modes of expression, peculiarly their own. And so, arrived at their highest development, both Religion and Art demand an independent existence, and the two stems which at first were intertwined and seemed to belong to the same plant, now appear to spring from a root of their own. This is the process from Aàron to Christ, from Bezaleël and Aholiab to the Apostles. And, by virtue of that same process, Calvinism occupies a higher standpoint in the 16th century than Romanism could reach. Consequently Calvinism was neither able, nor even permitted, to develop an art-style of its own from its religious principle. To have done this would have been to slide back to a lower level of religious life. On the contrary, its nobler effort must be to release religion and divine worship more and more from its sensual form and to encourage its vigorous spirituality. This it was enabled to do because of the powerful pulse-beat by which at that time the religious life coursed through the arteries of mankind. And the fact that in these days, our Calvinistic churches are deemed cold and *unheimish*, and a reintroduction of the symbolical in our places of worship is longed for, we owe to the sad reality that the pulse-





beat of the religious life in our times, is so much fainter than it was in the days of the martyrs. But so far from borrowing from this the right of redescending to a lower level of religion, this faintness of the religious life ought to inspire the prayer upon the lips of God's children for a mightier inworking of the Holy Spirit. Second childhood, in your old age, is a painful, retrograde movement. The man who fears God, and whose faculties remain clear and unimpaired, does not on the brink of age return to the playthings of his infancy.

One more objection might maintain itself after this demonstration, and that too I want to face. The question may be asked whether a really independent life-tendency should not create its own art-style, even if it developed itself as absolutely secular. Let the real meaning of the objection be well understood. It does not suggest that Calvinism if truly possessed of an aesthetic significance, should have given a certain direction to the practice of art, for the fact that Calvinism has truly done this will presently show itself. The point of this objection hits deeper, and puts the question: whether in the first place a secular art-style is conceivable; and in the second place, whether the creation of such a purely secular and dominating art-style could have been demanded of Calvinism. The answer I make to the first is: that in the history of art no record of the rise of such an all-embracing art-style independent of Religion, is to be found. Mark you, I do not here speak of a school of a single art, but of an art-style which puts a concentric impress upon all the arts together. To a certain degree it could be asserted of Roman art and of that of the Renaissance that, although devoid of a leading religious impulse, they nevertheless reached an all-sided revelation in art-forms. Speaking of architecture, the dome in Roman and Byzantine art is not an expression of a religious thought but of political energy. The dome symbolizes world-power, and, though it may



be in a different sense, of the Renaissance also it must be confessed, that it did not take its rise in religion, but in the circles of civil and social life. Now the Renaissance will be considered more fully in the third part of this lecture, but with respect to the Roman art-style I here answer, first, that a style, which borrowed almost all its motives from Greek art can scarcely boast of an independent character; and secondly, that, in Rome, the State-idea had become so identified with the Religious idea, that when, in the period of the emperors, art reached its height of prosperity while sacrifices were burned to Divus Augustus, it is unhistorical to consider State and Religion any longer as being at that time separate spheres.

But, apart from this historic outcome, it may be questioned, whether such an all-embracing art-style ever *could* have originated outside of Religion. The rise of such a style demands a central motive in the mental and emotional life of a people, which shall dominate the whole existence from within, and which consequently carries its effect from this spiritual centre to its outermost circumference. Not of course as though a national world of art ever could be the product of intellectual thought. Intellectual art is no art, and the effort put forth by Hegel to draw art from thoughts, militated against the very nature of art. Our intellectual, ethical, religious and aesthetic life each commands a sphere of its own. These spheres run parallel and do not allow the derivation of one from the other. It is the central emotion, the central impulse, and the central animation, in the mystical root of our being, which seeks to reveal itself to the outer world in this fourfold ramification. Art also is no side-shoot on a principal branch, but an independent branch that grows from the trunk of our life itself, even though it is far more nearly allied to Religion than to our thinking or to our ethical being. If however it be asked how there can arise a unity of conception embracing these four domains,



it constantly appears that in the finite this unity is only found at that point where it springs from the fountain of the Infinite. There is no unity in your thinking save by a well-ordered philosophical system, and there is no system of philosophy which does not ascend to the issues of the Infinite. In the same way there is no unity in your moral existence save by the union of your inner existence with the moral world-order, and there is no moral world-order conceivable but for the impression of an Infinite power that has ordained order in this moral world. Thus also no unity in the revelation of art is conceivable, except by the art-inspiration of an Eternal Beautiful, which flows from the fountain of the Infinite, and raises us to the Infinite. Hence no characteristic all-embracing art-style can arise except as a consequence of the peculiar impulse from the Infinite that operates in our inmost being. And since this is the very privilege of Religion, over intellect, morality and art, that she alone effects the communion with the Infinite in our self-consciousness, the call for a secular, all-embracing art-style, independent of any religious principle, is simply absurd.

Understand that art is no fringe that is attached to the garment, and no amusement that is added to life, but a most serious power in our present existence, and therefore its principal variations must maintain, in their artistic expression, a close relation with the principal variations of our entire life; and since, without exception, these principal variations of our entire human existence are dominated by our relation to God, would it not be both a *degradation* and an *underestimation* of art, if you were to imagine the ramifications, into which the art-trunk divides itself, to be independent of the deepest root which all human life has in God? Consequently no art-style has sprung from the Rationalism of the 18th century, nor from the principle of 1789, and however grievous it may be to our 19th century, all her efforts to create a new art-



style of her own, have ended in perfect failure, and then only do her artistic productions possess a real charm when she allows herself to be inspired by the wonders of the past.

Thus by itself the possibility must be denied that a proper art-style can originate independently of religion; but even if this were otherwise, it would still be illogical, and this was my second argument, to demand such a secular tendency of Calvinism. For how can you desire that a life-movement, which found the origin of its power in the arraignment of all men and of all human life before the face of God, should have sought the impulse, the passion and the inspiration for its life *outside of God* in so exceedingly important a domain as that of the mighty arts? There remains, therefore, no shadow of a reality in the scornful reproach that the non-creation of an art-style of its own is a conclusive proof of Calvinism's artistic poverty. Only under the auspices of its religious principle could Calvinism have created a general art-style, and just because it had reached a so much higher stage of religious development, its very principle forbade it the symbolical expression of its religion in visible and sensual forms.

---

Hence the question must be differently stated. And this brings us to our second point. The question is not whether Calvinism produced what, with its higher view-point it was no longer allowed to create, *viz.*, a general art-style of its own, but *what interpretation of the nature of art flows from its principle*. In other words, is there in the life- and world-view of Calvinism a place for art, and if so, what place? Is its principle opposed to art, or, if judged by the standards of the Calvinistic principle, would a world without *art* lose one of its ideal spheres? I do not speak now of the abuse, but simply of the use of art. In every domain, life is bound to respect the dimensions of this domain.





Encroachment on the domain of others is always unlawful ; and our human life will only then attain its nobler harmony when all its functions cooperate in just proportion to our general development. The logic of the mind may not scorn the feelings of the heart, nor should the love of the beautiful silence the voice of conscience. However holy Religion may be, it must keep within its own bounds, lest, in crossing its lines, it degenerate into superstition, insanity or fanaticism. Hypertrophy of the head, accompanied by atrophy of the heart, results in a sickly development, and, in the same way, the too exuberant passion for art which laughs at the whispering of conscience, must end in an unlovely discord quite different from what the Greeks exalted in their *kalokagathos*. The fact, for instance, that Calvinism arrayed itself against all unholy play with woman's honor, and stigmatized every form of immoral artistic enjoyment as a degradation, lies therefore outside our scope. All this properly denounces the abuse, while it carries no weight whatever with the question of the lawful use. And that the lawful use of art was not opposed, but encouraged and even recommended, by Calvin himself, his own words readily prove. When the Scripture mentions the first appearance of art, in the tents of Jubal, who invented the harp and organ, Calvin emphatically reminds us that this passage treats of "excellent gifts of the Holy Spirit." He declares that in the artistic instinct God had enriched Jubal and his posterity with rare endowments. And he frankly states that these inventive powers of art prove most evident testimonies of the Divine bounty. More emphatically still, he declares, in his commentaries on Exodus, that "all the arts come from God and are to be respected as Divine inventions." According to Calvin, these precious things of the natural life we owe originally to the Holy Ghost. In all Liberal Arts, in the most as well as in the least important, the praise and glory of



God are to be enhanced. The arts, says he, have been given us for our comfort, in this our depressed estate of life. They react against the corruption of life and nature by the curse. When his colleague, Prof. Cop, at Geneva, took up arms against art, Calvin purposely instituted measures, by which, as he writes, to restore this foolish man to sounder sense and reason. The blind prejudice against Sculpture, on the ground of the Second Commandment, Calvin declares unworthy of refutation. He exults in Music as a marvellous power to move hearts and to ennoble tendencies and morals. Among the excellent favors of God for our recreation and enjoyment, it occupies in his mind the highest rank. And even when art condescends to become the instrument of mere entertainment to the masses, he asserts that this sort of pleasure should not be denied them. In view of all this we may say, that Calvin esteemed art, in all its ramifications, as a gift of God, or, more especially, as a gift of the Holy Ghost; that he fully grasped the profound effects worked by art upon the life of the emotions; that he appreciated the end for which art has been given, *viz.*, that by it we might glorify God, and ennoble human life, and drink at the fountain of higher pleasures, yea even of common sport; and finally, that so far from considering art as a mere imitation of nature, he attributed to it the noble vocation of disclosing to man a higher reality than was offered to us by this sinful and corrupted world.

Now if it implied nothing beyond the personal interpretation of Calvin, this testimony would of course have no conclusive value for Calvinism in general. But when we observe that Calvin himself was not gifted with personal artistic talents, and that therefore he must have derived this brief system of Aesthetics directly from his principle, he may be credited with having expounded the Calvinistic consideration of art as such. And it is not difficult to show that such is the case. To go direct to the heart of the question, we begin with Calvin's last saying, *viz.*, that art reveals



to us a higher reality than is offered by this sinful world. You are familiar with the question, so often debated in art circles, whether art should imitate nature or should transcend it. Grapes were painted with such accuracy that birds were deceived by their appearance and tried to eat them. And this imitation of nature seemed the highest ideal to the Socratic school. Herein lies the truth, all too often forgotten by idealists, that the forms and relations exhibited by nature are and ever must remain the fundamental forms and relations of all actual reality, and an art which does not watch the forms and motions of nature nor listen to its sounds, but arbitrarily likes to hover over it, deteriorates into a wild play of fantasy. On the other hand all idealistic interpretation of art should be justified in opposition to the purely empirical, as often as the empirical confines its task to the mere imitation of nature. For then the same mistake is committed in art so often committed by scientists when they confine their scientific task to the mere observation, computation and accurate report of facts. And even as science has to ascend from the phenomena to the investigation of their inherent order, to the end that man, enriched by the knowledge of this order, may propagate nobler species of animals, flowers and fruits, than nature, herself, could produce, so also it is the vocation of art, not merely to observe every thing visible and audible, and to apprehend it, and reproduce it artistically, but much more to discover in those natural forms the order of the beautiful, and, enriched by this higher knowledge, to produce a beautiful world that transcends the beautiful of nature. And this is what Calvin asserted; *viz.*, that the arts exhibit gifts which God has placed at our disposal, now that, as the sad consequence of sin, the real beautiful has fled from us.—Your decision here depends entirely upon your interpretation of the world. If you are considering the world as the realisation of the absolute good, then there is none higher, and art can have no other voca-



tion than to copy nature. If, as the pantheist teaches, the world proceed, by slow processes, from the incomplete to perfection, then art becomes the prophecy of a higher phase of life to come. But if you confess that the world was once beautiful, but by the curse has become *undone*, and by a final catastrophe is to pass to its full state of glory, excelling even the beautiful of paradise, then art has the mystical task of reminding us in its productions of the beautiful that was lost and of anticipating in its coming lustre. Now this last-mentioned instance is the Calvinistic confession. It realized, more clearly than Rome, the hideous, corrupting influences of sin; this led to a higher estimation of the nature of paradise in the beauty of original righteousness, and guided by this enchanting remembrance, Calvinism prophesied a redemption of outward nature also, to be realized in the reign of celestial glory. From this standpoint, Calvinism honored art as a gift of the holy Ghost and as a consolation in our present life, enabling us to discover in and behind this sinful life a richer and more glorious background. Standing by the ruins of this once so wonderfully beautiful creation, art points out to the Calvinist both the still visible lines of the original plan, and what is even more, the splendid restoration by which the Supreme Artist and Master-BUILDER will one day renew and enhance even the beauty of His original creation.

If thus, on this principal point, Calvin's personal interpretation agrees entirely with the Calvinistic confession, the same applies to the next point in question. If the Sovereignty of God is and remains, for Calvinism, its unchangeable point of departure, then art cannot originate from the Evil One; for Satan is destitute of every creative power. All he can do is to abuse the good gifts of God. Neither can art originate with man, for, being a creature himself, man cannot but employ the powers and gifts, put by God at his disposal. If God is and remains Sovereign, then art can work no enchantment except in keeping





with the ordinances which God ordained for the beautiful, when He, as the Supreme Artist, called this world into existence. And, further, if God is and remains Sovereign, then he also imparts these artistic gifts to whom He will, first even to Cain's, and not to Abel's posterity; not as if art were Cainitic, but in order that he who has sinned away the highest gifts, should at least, as Calvin so beautifully says, in the lesser gifts of art have some testimony of the Divine bounty. That artistic ability, that art-capacity, as such, can have room in human nature, we owe to our creation after the image of God. In the real world, God is Creator of everything; the power of producing new things is His alone, and therefore He always continues to be the creative artist. As God, He alone is the original One, we are only the bearers of His Image. Our capacity to create after Him and after what He created, can only consist in the unreal creations of art. So, we, in our fashion, may imitate God's handiwork, and feel impelled by God Himself to create a kind of cosmos in our architectural monument; to embellish nature's forms, in Sculpture; to reproduce life, animated by lines and tints, in our painting; to transfuse the mystical spheres in our Music and in our poetry. And all this because the beautiful is not the product of our own fantasy, nor of our subjective perception, but has an objective existence, being itself the expression of a Divine perfection. After the Creation, God saw that all things were good. Imagine that every human eye were closed and every human ear stopped up, even then the beautiful remains, and God sees it and hears it, for, not only "His Eternal Power", but also His "Divinity", from the very creation, has been perceived in his creature, both spiritually and somatically. An artist may notice this in himself. If he realizes how his own art-capacity depends upon his having an eye for art, he must come to the conclusion that the original eye for art is in God Himself, Whose art capacity is all-producing, and after Whose image the artist among men was made.



We know this from the creation around us, from the firmament that overarches us, from the abounding luxury of nature, from the wealth of forms in man and animal, from the rushing sound of the stream and from the song of the nightingale; for how could all this beauty have been created, except by One who preconceived the beautiful in His own Nature, and produced it from his own Divine perfection? Thus you see that the Sovereignty of God, and our creation after His Likeness, necessarily lead to that high interpretation of the origin, the nature and the vocation of art, as adopted by Calvin and still approved by our own artistic instinct. The world of sounds, the world of forms, the world of tints and the world of poetic ideas, can have no other source than God, and it is our privilege as bearers of His image, to have a perception of this beautiful world and to be able to enjoy it.

---

And thus we come to the third and last point to be investigated. We found that the want of an art-style of its own is no objection against Calvinism, but on the contrary indicates the higher stage of its development. After that, we considered how exalted an interpretation of the nature of art flows from the Calvinistic principle. And now let us see how nobly Calvinism has encouraged the progress of the arts both in principle and in practice.

And here, in the first place, I draw your attention to the important fact that it was Calvinism who, by releasing art from the guardianship of the Church, first recognized its majority. I do not deny that the Renaissance had the same tendency, but, with the Renaissance, this was marred by a too one-sided preference for the Paganistic, and a passion for ideas more Heathen than Christian; while Calvin, on the other hand, kept firmly to the Christian ideas, and more sharply even than any other Reformer opposed every Paganistic influence. To deal justly however with the older



Christian Church a somewhat fuller explanation is here in place. The Christian Religion made its appearance in a world, which, though thoroughly demoralized, still recommended itself by its high civilization and its artistic splendour. Therefore, in order to oppose principle to principle, Christianity was bound, at the outset, to react against the then-dominating overestimation of art, and thereby to break the dangerous influence which Paganism was exercising, in its last convulsion, by the enchantment of its beautiful world. As long, therefore, as the struggle with Paganism remained a struggle for life or death, the relation of Christianity to art could not but be an hostile one. This first period was followed almost immediately by the influx into the highly civilized Roman Empire of the still almost barbaric Germanic tribes, after whose speedy baptism the centre of power gradually removed from Italy to beyond the Northern Alps, thus giving, to the Church, as early as the 8th century an almost exclusive ascendancy over the whole of Europe. Thanks to this constellation, the Church for several centuries became the guardian of higher human life, and so nobly did she acquit herself of this exalted task that no religious hatred or party prejudice dares question any longer the glorious result she then achieved. In the literal sense of the word, all human development of that period depended entirely upon the church. No science and no art could prosper unless shielded by ecclesiastical protection. And hence originated that specifically Christian art, which, in its first passion, tried to embody the maximum of spiritual essence in the minimum of form and tint and tone. It was no art copied from nature, but art invoked from out the spheres of heaven, which fettered music in the Gregorian chains, the pencil and chisel of which longed after acosmic creations, and which only in the building of the cathedrals attained the really beautiful and reaped imperishable fame. All educational guardianship, meanwhile, leads to its own dissolution. A rightminded guardian intends to render his guard-



ianship superfluous as soon as possible, and he who tries to prolong his control, even after his ward has reached maturity, creates an unnatural relation and makes his guardianship itself an incentive to resistance. When therefore the first education of Northern Europe was completed, and the church still persisted in swaying her absolute sceptre across the entire domain of life, four great movements were started from as many different sides, *viz.*, the Renaissance, in the domain of art, the Republicanism of Italy in politics, Humanism in science, and lastly and centrally, in Religion, the Reformation.

No doubt these four movements received their impulse from very different, and in some cases conflicting principles, but they all agreed on this one point, *viz.*, that they must escape from ecclesiastical tutelage, and create a life of their own in accordance with their own principle. Therefore, it is not at all surprising, that, in the 16th century, these four powers repeatedly acted in concert. It was the one human life that, weary of any further guardianship, hastened in every way after a freer development, and therefore, when the old guardian tried with tooth and nail to hold back the declaration of maturity, it was but natural that those four powers should encourage one another, fiercely to resist, nor to desist before freedom was obtained. Without this quadruple alliance not only would the tutelage of the church have persevered over all Europe, but, once the rebellion crushed, its rule would have become even more grievous and intolerable than beforehand. Thanks to this cooperation, the bold undertaking was crowned with enduring success, and the combatants, by their combined energy, earned the everlasting glory of having brought art and science, as well as politics and Religion, to the full enjoyment of maturity.

Will it be fair on this ground to assert that Calvinism has freed Religion, and not art, and that the honors of the emancipation of art belong exclusively to the Re-





naissance? I readily grant that the Renaissance has a right to claim its share of the victory, especially in so far as it stimulated art herself to vindicate her liberty by her wonderful productions. Aesthetic genius, if I may so call it, had been implanted by God Himself, in the Greek, and only by hailing again, amid loud rejoicings, the fundamental powers of art, which Greek genius had discovered, could art justify her claim to an independent existence. This by itself however could not have achieved the desired liberation. For the church of those days did not in the least oppose classical art as such. On the contrary, she welcomed the Renaissance, and Christian art did not hesitate a moment to enrich herself with the best the Renaissance had to offer. In the so-called *Cinquecento*, or high-Renaissance, Bramante and Da Vinci, Michael Angelo and Raphael stored the *splendor ecclesiae* with treasures of art, quite unique and inimitable, never to be surpassed. Thus the old tie continued to unite church and art, and this of itself established a permanent patronage. The real liberation of art required much more patent energies. From principle, the church was to be forced back to her spiritual realm. Art, having hitherto confined herself to the holy spheres, had now to make her appearance in the social world. And in the church, Religion had to put aside her symbolical robes, in order that, after having ascended to the higher spiritual level, her life-giving breath might animate the whole world. Just as Von Hartmann truly observes: "It is pure spiritual Religion which with one hand deprives the artist of his specifically religious art, but which, with the other, offers him, in exchange, a whole world, to be religiously animated." Now Luther certainly *desired* such a pure, spiritual Religion, but Calvinism was the first to *grasp* it. First under the stirring impulses of Calvinism, our fathers broke with the *splendor ecclesiae*, i. e., with her outward glitter, with her vast possessions, by which art was financially held in bondage, and also with her outward exhibition of power,



which could not rest until it had subjected to itself every expression of human life. And although Humanism rebelled against this oppressive and unnatural state of things, it could never hope to effect a radical change if left to its own resources. Only think of Erasmus. Triumph in the struggle of that time was not reserved for the man who carried on the strife for Religious liberty by mere criticism, but only for him, who, standing on an higher stage of religious development, overcame the symbolical religion as such. And, therefore, we may boldly assert that it was Calvinism who prompted the spirited impulse by which the victory was won, and, by its indefatigable perseverance, has put an end to the unjustified tutelage of the church over all human life, art included.

Meanwhile I readily grant that this outcome would have been purely accidental, if Calvinism had not, at the same time, led to a deeper interpretation of human life and human art. When, under Victor Emmanuel, with the help of Garibaldi, Italy was made free, the day of liberty also dawned for the Waldenses, in Middle and Southern Italy, but neither the *Re galantuomo*, nor Garibaldi, had even thought of the Waldensians. Thus it were possible that in its struggle for human liberty Calvinism also cut the tie that thus far held art a captive, but without having in the least intended to do this, by virtue of its principle. And therefore I must still illustrate the second factor, which alone decides the case. I have already, more than once, called your attention to the important significance of the Calvinistic doctrine of "common grace," and in this lecture on art, I must refer to it again. That which is to be ecclesiastical must bear the stamp of faith, therefore *Christian* art can only go out from believers. If therefore I only recognise as a real, true art the so-called *Christain* art, I thereby claim that the exalted gift of art is only the portion of believers. Calvinism, on the contrary, has taught us that all liberal arts are gifts which God imparts promiscuously to be-



lievers and to unbelievers, yea, that, as history shows, these gifts have flourished even in a larger measure outside the holy circle. "These radiations of Divine Light," he wrote, "shone more brilliantly among unbelieving people than among God's saints." And this of course quite reverses the proposed order of things. If you limit the higher enjoyment of art to regeneration, then this gift is exclusively the portion of believers, and must bear an ecclesiastical character. In that case it is the outcome of particular grace. But if, at the hand of experience and history, you become persuaded that the highest art-instincts are *natural* gifts, and hence belong to those excellent graces which, in spite of sin, by virtue of *common grace*, have continued to shine in human nature, it plainly follows that art can inspire both believers *and* unbelievers, and that God remains Sovereign to impart it, in His good pleasure, alike to Heathen and to Christian nations. This applies not only to art, but to all the natural utterances of human life, and is illustrated by the comparison in early times between Israel and the other nations. As far as holy things are concerned, Israel is chosen, and is not only blessed above all nations, but stands among all nations, isolated. In the question of Religion, Israel has not only a larger share, but Israel *alone* has the truth, and all the other nations, even the Greeks and the Romans, are bent beneath the yoke of falsehood. Christ is not partly of Israel and partly of the nations; He is of Israel alone. Salvation is of the Jews. But just in proportion as Israel shines forth from within the domain of Religion, so is it equally backward when you compare the development of its art, science, politics, commerce and trade to that of the surrounding nations. It is noteworthy that the building of the Temple required the coming of Hiram from a heathen country to Jerusalem. And Solomon, in whom, after all, was found the Wisdom of God, not only knows that Israel stands behind in architecture and needs help from without,



but by his action he publicly shows that he, as the king of the Jews is in no way ashamed of Hiram's coming, which he realizes as a natural ordinance of God.

So, Calvinism, on the ground both of the Scriptures and of history, has arrived at the confession, that, wherever the Sanctuary discloses itself, all unbelieving nations stand outside, but that nevertheless, in their secular history, they are called by God to a special vocation, and form, by their very existence, an indispensable link in the long chain of phenomena. Every utterance of human life requires a special disposition in blood and in descent, and proper adaptations of lot and incident as well as of natural environment and climatic effects are to contribute to its development. In Israel all this was adapted to the holy heritage which it was to receive in the Divine Revelation. But if Israel was chosen for the sake of Religion, this in no way prevented a parallel election of the Greeks for the domain of philosophy and for the revelations of art, nor of the Romans, for the classical development within the domain of Law and of State. The life of art also has both its provisional development, and its later unfoldings, but in order to insure a more vigorous growth it wanted first of all clear self-consciousness in its centrum that once for all the unchangeable foundations of its ideal existence might be brought to light. Such a phenomenon as art, arrives at this self-revelation once only, and that revelation once granted, remains classical, tone-giving and forever dominant. And although a further art-development may seek newer forms and richer material, the nature of the original find remains the same. Thus Calvinism was not only able, but bound to confess, that, by the grace of God, the Greeks were the primordial nation of art; that owing to this classical Greek development, art conquered its rights of independent existence; and that although it certainly ought to radiate also in the sphere of Religion, it should in nowise be engrafted in a dependent sense upon the ecclesiastical





tree, or, if you like, upon the tree of faith. Therefore, being a return of art to her rediscovered fundamental lines, the Renaissance did not present itself to Calvinism as a sinful effort, but as a divinely ordered movement. And as such Calvinism encouraged the Renaissance not by pure accident, but with clear consciousness and definite purpose, in accordance with its deepest principle.

Hence there is no question that, simply as an involuntary result of its opposition to the Hierarchy of Rome, Calvinism should at the same time have encouraged the emancipation of art. On the contrary, it demanded this liberation and was bound to effect it, within its own circle, as a consequence of its world- and life-view. The world after the fall is no lost planet, only destined now to afford the church a place in which to continue her combats, and humanity is no aimless mass of people which only serves the purpose of giving birth to the elect. On the contrary the world now, as well as in the beginning, is the theatre for the mighty works of God, and humanity remains a creation of His hand, which, apart from salvation and from what the future may bring, completes under this present dispensation, here on earth, a mighty process, and in its historical development is to glorify the name of Almighty God. To this end He has ordained for this humanity all sorts of life-utterances, and among these, art occupies a quite independent place. Art reveals ordinances of creation which neither science, nor politics, nor religious life, nor even revelation can bring to light. She is a plant that grows and blossoms upon her own root, and without denying that this plant may have required the help of a temporary support, and that in early times the church lent this prop in a very excellent way, yet the Calvinistic principle demanded that this plant of art should at length acquire strength to stand alone and vigorously to extend its branches in every direction. And thus Calvinism confessed that, the Greeks having first discovered the laws



by which the existence and the growth of this art-plant are governed, therefore remain entitled to bind every further growth and every new impulse of art to their first, their classical development. Not for the sake of stopping short with Greece, or of adopting her Paganistic form without criticism. Art, like Science, cannot afford to tarry at her origin, but must ever develop herself more richly, at the same time purging herself of whatsoever had been falsely intermingled with the earlier plant. Only, the law of her growth and life, once discovered, must remain the fundamental law of art for ever; a law, not imposed upon her from without, but sprung from her own nature. And so, by loosening every unnatural, and cleaving to her natural ties, art must find the inward strength required for the maintenance of her liberty. Calvin therefore does not estrange art, science, and Religion, from one another; on the contrary, what he desires is that all human life shall be permeated by these three vital powers together. There must be a *science* which will not rest until it has thought out the entire cosmos; a religion which cannot sit still until she has permeated every sphere of human life; and so also there must be an Art which, despising no single department of life, adopts, into her splendid world, the whole of human life, Religion included.

---

Let this suggestion of the wide extension of the domain of art introduce my last point, *viz.*, that Calvinism has also *actually and in a concrete sense advanced the development of the arts*. It scarcely needs a reminder that in the realm of art Calvinism was not able to play the role of a Sorcerer, and could only work with natural data. That the Italian has a more tuneful voice than the Scot, and that the German is carried away by a more passionate impulse of song than the Netherlander, are simple data with which art had to reckon, under Roman supremacy, as



well as under that of Calvinism. An undeniable fact, which explains why it is neither logical nor honest to reproach Calvinism for that which is merely due to the differences of national character. The truth is equally plain that, in the Northern countries of Europe, Calvinism was not able to produce, as by magic, marble, porphyry or free-stone, from the ground, and that therefore the arts of sculpture and architecture, which require rich, natural stone, were more readily developed in those countries where quarries abound, than in a country such as the Netherlands, where the ground consists of clay and mire. Poetry, music, and painting, therefore, can alone be considered here, as the three free arts that are most independent of all natural data. This does not imply that the Flemish and Dutch city-hall fails to hold a position of honor all its own among the creations of architecture. Louvain and Middleburg, Antwerp and Amsterdam still bear witness to what Dutch art wrought in stone. And he who has seen the statues in Antwerp and at the tomb of William the Silent, carved by Quellinus and by De Keyzers, does not question the ability of our artists of the chisel. But this is subject to the objection that the style of our City-Hall was found long before Calvinism made its appearance in the Netherlands, and that, even in its later development, it exhibits no single feature that can remind one of Calvinism. By virtue of its principle Calvinism built no cathedrals, no palaces and no amphitheatres and was unable to erect mighty piles of architecture, and equally unable to populate the vacant niches of these gigantic buildings with sculptured ornaments.

Indeed, the merits of Calvinism, with respect to art, are to be found elsewhere. Not in the objective, but exclusively in the more subjective arts which, not depending upon the patronage of wealth and not in want of the marble quarry, have their spontaneous rise in the human mind. Of poetry I make no mention, in this connection. The narrow bounds



within which our language is confined, have excluded our poetry from the world at large, and whatever excellent schools of poets may have flourished among us, their influence necessarily remained confined to the Netherlands, and, therefore, they were not able to affect poetry as a world-phenomenon. This privilege is only reserved for those larger nations, whose language, being spoken by millions and millions, therefore becomes a vehicle for international intercourse. But if the province of *language* for smaller nations is limited, the *eye* is international, and music heard by the *ear* is understood in every heart. In order, therefore, that we may trace the influence of Calvinism upon the development and the welfare of art, we must limit ourselves, in the international sense, to the two subjective and independent arts, those of *painting* and *music*.

Now of both these arts it is to be stated that, before the days of Calvinism, they soared high above the common life of the Nations, and that only under the Calvinistic influence did they descend to the so much richer life of the people. As regards painting, just recall the productions of Dutch art by brush and etching-needle in the 16th and 17th centuries. Rembrandt's name alone is here sufficient to invoke a whole world of art-treasures to rise before your mind's eye. The museums of every country and continent still vie with each other, to the utmost, in their efforts to obtain some specimen of his work. Even a broker has respect for an art-school whose returns represent so vast a capital. And even in our days the masters all over the world are still borrowing their most effectual motives and their best art-tendencies from what, at that time, demanded the world's admiration as an entirely new school of painting. Of course this does not say that all these painters were personally staunch Calvinists. In the earlier art-school, which flourished under the influence of Rome the "bon Catholiques" were also very rare. Such influences do not operate personally, but put their





impress upon surroundings and society, upon the world of perceptions, of representations and of thought, and as a result of these various impressions an art-school makes its appearance. And, taken in this sense, the antithesis between the past and the present in the school of Dutch art is unmistakable. Before this period, no account was taken of the people, they only were considered worthy of notice who were superior to the common man, *vis.*, the high world of the church and of the priests, of knights and princes. But, since then, the people had come of age, and under the auspices of Calvinism, the art of painting, prophetic of a democratic life of later times, was the first to proclaim the people's maturity. The family ceased to be an annex to the church, and asserted its standing in its independent significance. By the light of common grace it was seen that the non-churchly life was also possessed of high importance and of an all sided art-motive. Having been overshadowed for many centuries by class-distinctions, the common life of man came out of its hiding-place like a new world, in all its sober reality. It was the broad emancipation of our ordinary earthly life, and the instinct for liberty, which thereby captured the heart of the nations and inspired them with delight in the enjoyment of treasures so long blindly neglected. Even Taine has sounded the praises of the blessing, which went forth from the Calvinistic love of liberty to the realm of art, and Carriere, who himself was equally far from sympathizing with Calvinism, loudly proclaims that Calvinism alone was able to plow the field on which free art could flourish.—It has frequently been remarked, moreover, that the idea of election by free grace has contributed not a little toward interesting art in the hidden importance of what was seemingly small and insignificant. If a common man, to whom the world pays no special attention, is valued and even chosen by God as one of His elect, this must lead the artist also to find a motive for his artistic studies in what is common and of every-



day occurrence, to pay attention to the emotions and the issues of the human heart in it, to grasp, with his artistic instinct, their ideal impulse, and, lastly, by his pencil to interpret for the world at large the precious discovery he has made. Even foolish and drastic extravagances became the motive for art-productions, merely as revelations of the human heart and as manifestations of human life. Man was also to be shown the image of his folly, that he might depart from evil. Thus far the artist had only traced upon his canvass the idealized figures of prophets and apostles, of saints and priests, now however, when he saw how God had chosen the porter and the wage-earner for Himself, he found interest not only in the head, the figure and the entire personality of the man of the people, but began to reproduce the human expression of every rank and station. And if thus far the eyes of all had been fixed constantly and solely upon the sufferings of the "Man of sorrows", some now began to understand, that there was a mystical suffering also in the general woe of man, revealing hitherto unmeasured depths of the human heart, and thereby enabling us to fathom much better the still deeper depths of the mysterious agonies of Golgotha. Ecclesiastical power no longer restrained the artist, and no princely gold chained him in its fetters. If artist, he also was man, mingling freely among the people, and discovering in and behind their human life, something quite different from what palace and castle had hitherto afforded him, and which proved to be much more valuable than the keenest eye had ever surmised. As Taine so significantly says: to Rembrandt, human life hid its face behind many sombre hues, but even in that chiaroscuro his grasp upon that life was profoundly real and significant. As the result therefore of the declaration of the people's maturity and of the love of liberty which Calvinism awakened in the heart of the nations, the common but rich human life disclosed to art an entirely new world, and, by opening the eye for the small and the



insignificant, and by opening the heart for the sorrows of mankind, from the rich content of this newly discovered world, the Dutch school of art has produced upon the canvass those wondrous art-productions which still immortalize its fame, and which have shown the way to all the nations for new conquests in its wake.

Finally, as to the significance Calvinism had for Music, we face one of its excellencies which, though less widely known, is, notwithstanding, highly important; as Mr. Douen taught us, ten years ago, in his two big volumes on Marot, Music and painting here run parallel. Even as in the ecclesiastical-aristocratic period it was only the high and the holy that interested the masters of the pencil, so in music the plain chant of Gregory was dominant, which abandoned rhythm, despised harmony, and which according to a professional critic, by its provisionally conservative character barred the way to the further artistic development of music. Far below the level of this stately chant flowed the freer song of the people, too often, alas, inspired by the worship of Venus, and which at the times of the so called "donkey-festivals", much to the chagrin of ecclesiastical officials, penetrated even the walls of the churches, and there occasioned those repulsive scenes which the Council of Trent first succeeded in putting under the ban. The church alone was privileged to make music, while that which the people produced was scorned, as being beneath the dignity of the art. Even in the oratory itself, while the people were allowed to listen to the holy music, they were forbidden to join in the song. Thus, as an art, music was almost entirely deprived of its independent standing. Only in so far as it could serve the church was it permitted to flourish artistically. Whatever it undertook on its own responsibility, had no higher call than the popular use. And as in every department of life, Protestantism in general, but Calvinism more consistently, bridled the tutelage of the church, so also was



music emancipated by it, and the way opened to its so splendid modern development. The men who first arranged the music of the Psalms for the Calvinistic singing were the brave heroes who cut the strands that bound us to the *Cantus firmus*, and selected their melodies from the free world of music. To be sure, by doing this, they adopted the people's melodies, but as Douen rightly remarks, only in order that they might return these melodies to the people purified and baptized in Christian seriousness. Music also would flourish, henceforth, not within the narrow limitations of particular grace, but in the wide and fertile fields of common grace. The choir was abandoned; in the sanctuary the people themselves would sing, and therefore Bourgeois and the Calvinistic virtuosi who followed him, were bound to make their selections from the popular melodies, but with this end in view, *viz.*, that now the people would no longer sing in the saloon or in the street, but in the sanctuary, and thus, in their melodies, cause the seriousness of the heart to triumph over the heat of the lower passions.

If this is the general merit of Calvinism, or rather the change which it effected in the domain of music, by forcing the idea of the laity to give room to that of the general priesthood of believers, historic accuracy requires a still more concrete elucidation. If Bourgeois was the great master whose works still assure him a front rank among the most notable composers of Protestant Europe, it is also worthy of note that this Bourgeois lived and labored in Geneva, under the very eyes of Calvin and even partly under his direction. It was this same Bourgeois who had the courage to adopt rhythm and to exchange the eight Gregorian modes for the two of major and minor from the popular music; to sanctify its art in consecrated hymn, and so to put the impress of honor upon that musical arrangement of tunes, from which all modern music had its rise. In the same way Bourgeois adopted the harmony or the song of several parts. He was the man





who wedded melody to verse by *expression*. The solfeggio, *i.e.* the singing by note, the reduction of the number of chords, the clearer distinction of the several gamuts, etc., by which the knowledge of music was so much simplified, is all owing to the perseverance of this Calvinistic Composer. And when Goudimel, his Calvinistic colleague, the teacher of the great Palestrine, once at Rome listening to the singing of the people in the church, discovered that the higher voices of the children outstripped the tenor, which had thus far held the lead, he for the first time gave the leading part to the soprano; a change of far-reaching influence which has ever since been maintained.

Pardon me if for a moment I detained you with these particulars, but the merits of Protestantism, and more particularly of Calvinism, in music are of too high an order to suffer longer depreciation without protest. I fully acknowledge that Calvinism exercised over some arts only an indirect influence, by the declaration of their maturity, and by affording them liberty to flourish in their own independence of character, but on music, the influence of Calvinism was a very positive one, due to its spiritual worship of God, which provided no room for the more material arts, but assigned a new rôle to song and to music by the creation of melodies and songs for the people. Whatever the old school did to join itself to the newer development of music, the modern music remained unnatural to the *cantus firmus*, because it sprang from a quite different root. Calvinism on the other hand not only joined itself to it, but under the leadership of Bourgeois and Goudimel gave it its first impulse, so that even Roman Catholic writers are constrained to acknowledge, that this beautiful development of music in the last and present centuries for the most part owed its rise to the heretical church-hymns. That in the later period Calvinism lost almost all influence in this domain, cannot be denied. For a long time Anabaptism overwhelmed us with its dualistic prejudices, and an unhealthy



spiritualism prevailed. But when on that account, with entire disregard of our great musical past, Calvinism is accused by Rome of aesthetic dullness, it is well to call to mind that the great Goudimel was murdered by Romish fanaticism in the massacre of S. Bartholomew. A fact which not unnaturally suggests the question, whether he has not forfeited all right of complaint about the stillness of the forest, who with his own hand has caught and killed the nightingale.

---



Transcribed by Dr. J. V. G.

## SIXTH LECTURE.

### CALVINISM AND THE FUTURE.

I am approaching the end of my task. The goal comes in sight. This is my final lecture. In the first lecture I unwound Calvinism from the petty tangles of confessional narrow-mindedness and raised it to the high rank of an independent system, embodying a specific principle, and yielding a comprehensive life- and world-view all its own, such as in point of historical significance may be placed on a line with the comprehensive systems of Paganism, Islamism and Romanism, whilst in profoundness of conception, correctness of structure and stage of development it surpasses them all. Next I pointed out how the principle of this vast system lies in the absoluteness of its religious-ethical standpoint. Further I traced for you the three lines along which Calvinism has given direction to the life of humanity in the spheres of politics, science and art. Of course, much might have been added to this, had it been our aim to trace the same influence in other departments of life. Since, however, the lack of time forbids this and I have already claimed more of your attention than a stranger should ask, I proceed without further delay to answer our final question: What is *the significance of Calvinism for the future?*

The prospect on the horizon does not present itself to us



in bright colors. I would not go so far as to assert that we are on the eve of universal social bankruptcy, but that the signs of the times are ominous admits of no denial. To be sure, in the control of nature and her forces, immense gains are being registered year by year, and the boldest imagination is unable to foretell to what heights of power in this respect the race may attain in the next half century. As a result of this the comforts of life are increasing. World-intercourse and communication are constantly becoming more rapid and widespread. Asia and Africa, until recently dormant, gradually feel themselves drawn into the larger circle of stirring life. Aided by sport, the principles of hygiene exert a growing influence. Consequently, we are physically stronger than the preceding generation. We live longer. And in combating the defects and infirmities that threaten and afflict our bodily life, surgical science makes us marvel at her achievements. In brief, the material, tangible side of life holds out the fairest of promises for the future.

And yet discontent makes itself heard and the thinking mind cannot suppress its misgivings, for, however high one may value the material things, they do not fill out the round of our existence as men. A psalm of praise may rise from the workman's humble cottage, whilst the millionaire in his palace succumbs to a deadly ennui and even contemplates suicide. Our personal life as men and citizens subsists not in the comforts that surround us, nor in the body, which serves us as a link with the outward world, but in the spirit that internally actuates us; and in this inner consciousness we are becoming more and more painfully aware, that the hypertrophy of our external life results in a serious atrophy of the spiritual. Not as if the faculties of thought and reflection, the arts of poetry and letters, were in abeyance. On the contrary, empirical science is more brilliant in her attainments than ever, universal knowledge spreads in constantly widening circles, and civilization, in Japan, for instance, is almost dazzled by her too-rapid conquests. But even





the intellect does not constitute the mind. Personality is seated more deeply in the hidden recesses of our inner being, where character is formed, whence the flame of enthusiasm is kindled, where the moral foundations are laid, where love's bud blossoms, whence spring consecration and heroism, and where in the sense for the Infinite, our time-bound existence reaches out unto the very gates of eternity. It is in regard to this seat of personality that we hear on all sides the complaint of impoverishment, degeneracy and petrification. The prevalence of this state of *malaise* explains the rise of a spirit like Von Schopenhauer's and the wide acceptance of his pessimistic doctrine reveals to what a deplorable extent this fatal Sirocco has scorched the fields of life. It is true, Tolstoi's efforts show force of character, but even his religious and social theory is a protest along the whole line against the spiritual degeneracy of our race. Von Nietzsche may give us offense by his sacrilegious mockery of Christ and his contempt for the weak and suffering, still what else is his demand for the "*Übermensch*" but the cry of despair wrung from the heart of humanity by the bitter consciousness that it is spiritually pining away. What is social-democracy also but a gigantic protest against the insufficiency of the existing order of things. Even Anarchism and Nihilism but too plainly demonstrate that there are thousands upon ten thousands who would rather demolish and annihilate everything than continue to bear the burden of present conditions. The German author of the "*Decadenz der Völker*" describes nothing in the future but decay and social ruin. Even the sober-minded Lord Salisbury recently spoke of peoples and states for whose unceremonious burial preparations were already being made. How often has not the parallel been drawn between our time and the golden age of the Roman empire, when the external brilliancy of life likewise dazzled the eye, notwithstanding that the social diagnosis could yield no other verdict than "rotten to the very core". And, although on this continent, in a younger world, a relatively healthier tone of life prevails than in



senescent Europe, yet this will not for a moment mislead the thinking mind. It is impossible for you to shut yourselves off hermetically from the old world, as you form no humanity apart, but are a member of the great body of the race. The poison having once entered the system at a single point in due time must necessarily pervade the whole organism.

---

Now the serious question with which we are confronted is whether we can expect that by natural evolution a higher phase of social life will develop out of the present spiritual decline. The answer history supplies to this question is far from encouraging. In India, in Babylon, in Egypt, in Persia, in China and elsewhere, like periods of vigorous growth have been succeeded by times of spiritual decadence; and yet in not one of these lands has the downward course finally resolved itself in the movement towards higher things. All these nations to this day have continued in their spiritual stagnation. In the Roman empire alone has the dark night of boundless demoralisation been broken by the dawn of a higher life. But this light did not arise through evolution; it shone from the cross of Calvary. The Christ of God had appeared and by his gospel alone was the world of that time saved from certain destruction. And again, when towards the close of the middle ages Europe was threatened with social bankruptcy, a second resurrection from the dead and a manifestation of new vital power were witnessed, now among the peoples of the Reformation, but this time also not by way of evolution, but again through the same gospel for which the hearts were thirsting and whose truth was freely proclaimed as never before. What antecedents then does history furnish to lead us to expect in the present instance an evolution of life from death, whilst the symptoms of decomposition already suggest the bitterness of the grave? Mohammed, it is true, in the seventh century succeeded in creating a stir among the dead bones throughout the entire



Levant by throwing himself upon the nations as a second Messiah, greater even than the Christ. And assuredly if the coming of another Christ, surpassing in glory the Christ of Bethlehem, were possible, then the cure for moral corruption were found. Hence some indeed have been anxiously looking for the coming of some glorious Universal Spirit, who might again instill his vitalizing power into the heart-blood of the nations. But why dwell longer on such idle fancies? Nothing can possibly surpass the God-given Christ, and what we are to look for, instead of a second Messiah, is the second coming of the Same Christ of Calvary, this time with his fan in his hand for judgment, not to open up for our sin-cursed life a new evolution, but to receive it at its goal and solemnly to conclude the history of the world. Either this second coming, therefore, is near at hand, and what we are witnessing are the death-throes of humanity; or a rejuvenation is still in store for us, but if so, that rejuvenation can come only through the old and yet ever new gospel which at the beginning of our era and again at the time of the Reformation has saved the threatened life of our race. For every believer this is a matter of absolute and immediate certainty by reason of his faith, but even for the unbeliever it admits of historical verification, inasmuch as twice only has trial been made of a power that could infuse new vital vigor into the race, and both times Christianity and Christianity alone has proven equal to the task.

The most alarming feature, however, of the present situation is the lamentable absence of that receptivity in our diseased organism, which is indispensable to the effecting of a cure. In the Graeco-Roman world such receptivity did exist; the hearts opened spontaneously to receive the truth. To an even stronger degree this receptivity existed in the age of the Reformation when large masses cried for the gospel. Then as now the body suffered from anaemia, and blood-poisoning even had set in, but there was no aversion to the only effectual antidote. Now it is precisely this that distinguishes our modern



decadence from the preceding ones, that with the masses the receptivity for the gospel is on the decrease, whilst with the higher classes the positive aversion to it is on the increase. The invitation to bow the knee before Christ, as God, is met with a shrug of the shoulders, if not with the sarcastic rejoinder: "Fit for children and old women, not for us men!" The leading classes of society consider themselves in ever increasing measure as having outgrown Christianity.

Therefore, first of all, the question must be answered what has brought us to this pass, a question deriving its paramount importance from the fact that only a correct diagnosis can lead to effective medication. Now, historically, the cause of the evil is found in nothing else than in the spiritual degeneration which marked the close of the preceding century. The responsibility for this degeneration undoubtedly rests in part with the Christian churches themselves, not excepting those of the Reformation. Worn out by the struggle for reform, these last churches had fallen asleep, had allowed leaf and flower to wither on their branches, and had apparently become forgetful of their duties in reference to humanity at large and the whole sphere of human life. It is not necessary to enter upon this more fully. It may be taken for granted that towards the end of that century the general tone of life had become vapid and common-place, ignoble and base at heart. The eagerly devoured literature of the period furnishes the proof. By way of reaction against this, the proposal was then made by deistic and atheistic philosophers, first in England, but afterwards chiefly in France on the part of the Encyclopaedists, to place the whole of life on a new basis, turn upside down the existing order of affairs, and arrange a new world on the assumption that human nature continues in its uncorrupted state. This conception was an heroic one and awakened response; it struck the noblest chords of the human heart. In the great revolution





of 1789 it was first put into execution. Now in this mighty revolution, in this upheaval not only of political conditions, but even more of convictions, ideas, and usages of life, two elements should be sharply distinguished. In one respect it was an imitation of Calvinism, whilst in another respect it was in direct opposition to its principles. The great revolution, it should not be forgotten, broke out in a Roman-Catholic country, where first in the night of St. Bartholomew and subsequently by the revocation of the edict of Nantes, the Huguenots had been slaughtered and banished. After this violent suppression of Protestantism in France and other Roman-Catholic countries the ancient despotism had regained its ascendancy, and to these nations all the fruits of the Reformation had been lost. This, by way of caricature of Calvinism, invited and compelled the attempt to strike for freedom by external violence and to establish a pseudo-democratic state of affairs, which was to preclude for ever a return to despotism. Thus the French revolution, by meeting violence with violence, crime with crime, strove after the same social liberty which Calvinism had proclaimed among the nations but which had been attempted by Calvinism in the course of a purely spiritual movement. By this the French revolution in a sense executed a judgment of God, the result of which affords, even to Calvinists, cause for rejoicing. The shades of De Coligny were avenged in the September-murders of Mazas.

But this is only one side of the medal of the revolution. Its reverse discloses a purpose directly opposed to the sound Calvinistic idea of liberty. Calvinism by virtue of its profoundly serious conception of life had strengthened and consecrated the social and ethical ties; the French revolution loosened and entirely unfastened them, detaching life not merely from the Church but also from God's ordinances, even from God Himself. Man as such, each individual henceforth, was to be his own lord and master, guided by his own free will and good pleasure. The train



of life was to rush forward as heretofore but no longer bound to follow the track of the divine commandments. What else could result than wreckage and ruin? Enquire of the France of to-day what fruit the fundamental idea of her grand revolution has yielded to the nation after its first century of free sway so rich in horrors, and the answer comes in a most pitiful tale of national decadence and social demoralisation.

Humbled by the enemy from beyond the Rhine, internally rent by partisan fury, dishonored by the Panama cabal, disgraced by its pornography, the victim of oeconomic retrogression, stationary, nay, even decreasing in population, France, as has been well said by Garnier, a medical authority on the subject, France has been led by egotism to degrade marriage, by lust to destroy family-life, and presents to-day, in wide circles, the disgusting spectacle of men and women lost in unnatural sexual sin. I am aware that there are still thousands upon thousands of families in France living without reproach, who dearly grieve at the moral ruin of their country, but then these are the very circles which have resisted the false pretences of the Revolution; and, on the other hand, the almost bestialized circles are those that have succumbed to the first onset of Voltairianism.

From France this spirit of dissolution, this passion of wild emancipation has spread among the other nations especially through the medium of an infamously obscene literature, and infected their lives. Then nobler minds particularly in Germany, perceiving what depth of wickedness had been reached in France, made the bold attempt of realizing this enticing and reducing idea of "emancipation from God" in a higher form while yet retaining its essence. Philosophers of the first rank in a stately procession each for himself constructed a cosmology endeavoring to restore a firm foundation to social and ethical relations, either by putting them on the basis of natural law, or by giving



them an ideal substratum evolved from their own speculation. For a moment this attempt seemed to have a fair chance of success, for, instead of atheistically banishing God from their system, these philosophers sought refuge in Pantheism, and thus made it feasible to found the social structure, not as the French, on a state of nature or on the atomistic will of the individual, but on the processes of history and the collective will of the race, unconsciously tending towards the highest goal. And, indeed, for more than half a century this philosophy has imparted a certain stability to life; not that any real stability was inherent in the systems themselves, but because the established order of law and strong political institutions in Germany lent the indirect support of tradition to the walls of an edifice which otherwise would have immediately collapsed. Even so, however, it could not prevent that in Germany, also, moral principles became more and more problematic, moral foundations more and more insecure, no other right than that of actual law received recognition, and, however much German and French development might differ between themselves, both agreed in their aversion to, and rejection of, traditional Christianity. Voltaire's "*Ecrasez l'infâme*" is already left far behind by Von Nietzsche's blasphemous utterances on the Christ, and Von Nietzsche is the author whose works are being most eagerly devoured by the young *modern* Germany of our day. .

After this manner then, we in Europe at least, have arrived at what is called *modern life*, involving a radical breach with the Christian traditions of the Europe of the past. The spirit of this *modern life* is most clearly marked by the fact that it seeks the origin of man not in creation after the image of God but in evolution from the orang-outang or chimpanzee. Two fundamental ideas are clearly implied in this: 1. that the point of departure is no longer the ideal or the divine but the material and the low; 2. that the sovereignty of God, which ought to be supreme, is



denied, and man yields himself to the mystical current of an endless process, a *regressus* and *processus in infinitum*. Out of the root of these two fertile ideas a double type of life is now being evolved. On the one hand the interesting, rich and highly-organized life of University-circles attainable by the more refined minds only, and at the side of this, or rather far beneath it, a materialistic life of the masses, craving after pleasure, but, in their own way, also taking their point of departure in matter, and likewise, but after their own cynical fashion, emancipating themselves from all fixed ordinances. Especially in our ever-expanding large cities this second type of life is gaining the upper hand, and, overriding the voice of the country-districts, is giving a shape to public opinion, which avows its ungodly character more openly in each successive generation. Money, pleasure and social power, these alone are the objects of pursuit, and people are constantly growing less fastidious regarding the means employed to secure them. Thus the voice of conscience becomes less and less audible, and duller the lustre of the eye which on the eve of the revolution still reflected some gleam of the ideal. The fire of all higher enthusiasm has been quenched, only the dead embers remain. In the midst of the weariness of life, what can restrain from taking refuge in suicide? Deprived of the wholesome influence of rest, the brain is overstimulated and over-exerted till the asylums are no longer adequate for housing the insane. Whether property be not synonymous with theft, becomes a more and more seriously mooted question. That life ought to be freer and marriage less binding is being accepted more and more on an established proposition. The cause of monogamy is no longer worth fighting for, since polygamy and polyandry are being systematically glorified in all products of the realistic school of art and Literature. In harmony with this, religion is of course declared superfluous because it renders life gloomy. But art, art above all, is





in demand, not for the sake of its ideal worth, but because it pleases and intoxicates the senses. Thus people live in time and for temporal things, and shut their ears to the tolling of the bells of eternity. The irrepressible tendency is to make the whole view of life concrete, concentrated, practical. And out of this modernized private life there emerges a type of social and political life characterized by a decadence of parliamentarism, by an ever stronger desire for a dictator, by pauperism and capitalism arrayed against each other in sharp conflict, whilst heavy armaments on land and on sea, even at the price of financial ruin, become the ideal of these powerful states whose craving for territorial expansion threatens the very existence of the weaker nations. Gradually the conflict between the strong and the weak has grown to be the controlling feature of life, arising from Darwinism itself, whose central idea of a *struggle for life* has for its mainspring this very antithesis. Von Nietzsche has not shrunk from pouring out the phials of his contempt over everything that is weak and from exalting the strong for its own sake. Since Bismarck introduced it into higher politics the maxim of the right of the stronger has found universal acceptance. The scholars and experts of our day demand with increasing boldness that the common man shall bow to their authority. And the end can but be that once more the sound principles of democracy will be banished, to make room this time not for a new aristocracy of nobler birth and higher ideals, but for the coarse overbearing kratistocracy of a brutal money-power. Von Nietzsche is by no means exceptional, but proclaims as its herald the future of our modern life. And while the Christ in divine compassion showed heart-winning sympathy with the weak, modern life in this respect also takes the precisely opposite ground that the weak must be supplanted by the strong. Such *was* the process of selection to which we, ourselves, owe our origin and such is the process which in us and after us must work itself out to its ultimate consequences.



Meanwhile, as observed above, it should not be forgotten that there flows in modern life a side-current, of nobler origin. A host of high-minded men arose, who, shrinking from the uneasy chill of the moral atmosphere, and taking alarm at the brutality of the prevailing egotism, endeavored to strengthen the low-ebbing life partly by means of altruism, partly by means of a mystical cult of the feelings, partly even by means of the name of Christianity. Though in accord with the school of the French Revolution in their breach with Christian tradition and in their refusal to recognize any point of departure besides that of empiricism and nationalism, these men nevertheless, by acquiescing, as Kant, in a gross dualism, tried to escape from the fatal consequences of their principle. It is precisely from this dualism that they drew the inspiration for the many noble ideas elaborated in their theories, embodied in their poetry, conjured up before our imagination in touching romances, commended to our consciences in ethical treatises, and, best of all, realized not unfrequently in the serious pursuit of life. With them, side by side with the intellect, conscience had maintained its authority, for, even where God is forsaken, conscience, being divinely touched, remains capable of producing, to a certain extent, pure and sound emotions. To the vigorous initiative of these men we owe the numerous Sociological investigations and practical measures, which have allayed and alleviated so much suffering, and by an ideal altruism have put to shame the selfishness even of so many a Christian heart. Having a personal predisposition for mysticism some of them claimed the right to emancipate the inner life of the soul from all restraints of criticism. To lose one's self in the Infinite, and to feel the stream of the Infinite pulsate through the deepest recesses of the inner life, meant to them the highest raptures of piety. Others again—specially theologians,—to a less extent divorced from Christianity by reason of their antecedents, office or scholarly occupation, falling in with this altruism and mysticism, set themselves the task of so



metamorphosing the Christ that he might continue to glitter from the throne of humanity, as the highest ideal of the modernized human heart. Each and all inspired by sincerity and inspiring by their ideal intent, these endeavours may be traced from Schleiermacher down to Ritschl. He, therefore, who would look down upon such men would only dishonor himself. Much rather we ought to thank them for what they endeavored to save, also those women of noble aspirations, who by their character-novels, written in an elevated Christian spirit, have counteracted so much that was base, and have fostered so many precious germs. Even Spiritism, fraught with error though it be, has often received its impulse from the alluring hope that the contact with the eternal world, destroyed by criticism, could thus be reestablished through the medium of visions. Unfortunately, however boldly conceived this ethical dualism might be, and whatever bold metamorphoses this mysticism might indulge in, there always lurked behind it the naturalistic, nationalistic system of thought which the intellect had devised. They extolled the normal character of their cosmology over against the abnormalism of our belief, and the Christian religion, being abnormalistic in principle and in its mode of manifestation, inevitably lost ground, to such an extent that some of our best men did not shrink from professing that they preferred not only Spiritism but Mohammedanism, and Von Schopenhauer even Buddhism to the old Church Faith. It is true that the entire phalanx of theologians from Schleiermacher to Pfleiderer continued to pay high honors to the name of Christ, but it is equally undeniable that this remained possible only by subjecting Christ and the Christian confession to ever bolder metamorphoses. A painful fact, but one which becomes absolutely evident, if you compare the creed now current in these circles with the confession for which our Martyrs shed their blood.

Even confining ourselves to the Apostles' creed, which for more than a thousand years has been the Common



standard of all Christians, we find that the belief in God as the "Creator of heaven and earth" has been abolished, for creation has been supplanted by evolution. Abolished also has been the belief in God the Son, as born from the Virgin Mary, through conception from the Holy Ghost. Abolished further, with many, the belief in his resurrection and ascension and return to judgment. Abolished finally even the belief of the church in the resurrection of the dead, or at least in the resurrection of the body. The name of the Christian religion is still being retained, but in essence it has become a quite different religion in its principle, even of a diametrically opposite character. And when incessantly the charge is brought against us, that in point of fact the traditional Christ of the Church involves a complete metamorphosis of the genuine Jesus, whilst the modern interpretation has lifted the veil off the true character of the historical Jesus of Nazareth, we can but answer, that after all, historically, not this modern conception of Jesus of Nazareth but the church's confession of the God-Man is the one that has conquered the world; and that throughout those fifty ages the best and most pious of our race have paid homage to the Christ of tradition and rejoiced in Him as their Savior in the shadow of Death.

Though desiring to be second to none, therefore, in sincere appreciation of what is noble in such attempts, I am fully settled in my conviction that no help is to be expected from that quarter. A theology which virtually destroys the authority of the Holy Scriptures as a sacred book; which sees in sin nothing but a lack of development; recognises Christ for no more than a religious genius of central significance; views redemption as a mere reversal of our subjective mode of thinking; and indulges in a mysticism dualistically opposed to the world of the intellect,—such a theology is like a dam giving way before the first assault of the intrushing tide. It is a theology without hold upon





the masses, a quasi-religion utterly powerless to restore our sadly tottering moral life to even a temporary footing.

---

May more perhaps be expected from the marvellous energy displayed in the latter half of this century by Rome? Let us not too hastily dismiss this question. Though the history of the Reformation has established a fundamental antithesis between Rome and ourselves, and though the cry of "no popery", or the principle of antipapism still awakens an echo in so many hearts, it would nevertheless be narrow-minded and short-sighted to underestimate the real power which even now is manifest in Rome's warfare against Atheism and Pantheism. Only ignorance of the exhaustive studies of Romish philosophy and of Rome's successful efforts in social life, could account for such a superficial judgment. Calvin in his day already acknowledged that, as against a spirit from the Great Deep, he considered Roman believers his allies. A so-called orthodox Protestant need only mark in his confession and catechism such doctrines of religion and morals as are not subject to controversy between Rome and ourselves, to perceive immediately, that what we have in common with Rome concerns precisely those fundamentals of our Christian creed now most fiercely assaulted by the modern spirit. Undoubtedly on the points of the ecclesiastical hierarchy, of man's nature before and after the Fall, of justification, of the mass, of the invocation of saints and angels, of the worship of images, of purgatory and many others, we are as unflinchingly opposed to Rome as our fathers were. But does not current literature show that these are not now the points on which the struggle of the age is concentrated? Are not the lines of battle drawn as follows: Theism over against Pantheism; sin over against imperfection; the divine Christ of God over against Jesus the mere man; the cross a sacrifice of reconciliation over against



the cross as a symbol of martyrdom; the Bible as given by inspiration of God over against a purely human product; the ten commandments as ordained by God over against a mere archaeological document; the ordinances of God absolutely established over against an ever-changing law and morality spun out of man's subjective consciousness? Now in this conflict Rome is not an antagonist, but stands on our side, inasmuch as she also recognises and maintains the Trinity, the Deity of Christ, the Cross as an all-atoning sacrifice, the Scriptures as the Word of God, and the ten Commandments as a divinely imposed rule of life. Therefore, let me ask, if Roman theologians take up the sword to do valiant and skilful battle against the same tendency that we ourselves mean to fight to the death, is it not the part of wisdom to accept the valuable help of their elucidation? Calvin at least was accustomed to appeal to Thomas of Aquino. And I for my part am not ashamed to confess that on many points my views have been clarified through the work of the Romish theologians.

This, however, does not in the least involve, that our hope for the future may be placed in Rome's endeavour, and that we, idle ourselves, may await Rome's victory. A rapid survey of the situation will suffice to convince us of the contrary. To begin with your own continent, can South-America for a moment stand a comparison with the North? Now in South- and Central-America the Roman Catholic Church is supreme. It has exclusive control in this territory, Protestantism not even counting as a factor. Here, then, is an immense field in which the social and political power, which Rome can bring to bear upon the regeneration of our race, can freely exert itself, a field, moreover, in which Rome is not a recent arrival, but which she has occupied for almost three centuries. The youthful development of the social organism of these countries has stood under her influence; she has remained in control also of their intellectual and spiritual life since their liberation from Spain and Portugal.



Moreover the population of these States is derived from such European countries as have always been under the undisputed sway of Rome. The test, therefore, is as complete and fair as possible. But in vain do we look in those American Romish States for a life which elevates, develops energy, and exerts a wholesome influence outside. Financially they are weak, almost unprogressive in their economic conditions; in their political life they present the sad spectacle of endless internal strife; and, if one were inclined to form an ideal picture of the future of the world, he might almost do so by imagining the very opposite of what is the actual situation in South-America. Nor can it be pleaded in excuse of Rome that this is due to exceptional circumstances, for in the first place this political backwardness is met with not only in Chili, but likewise in Peru, in Brazil as well as in the Argentine Republic; while, crossing from the new to the old world, we reach, in spite of ourselves, the same conclusion. In Europe, also, the credit of all Protestant states is high, that of the Southern Countries which are Roman Catholic is at a painful discount. Economic and administrative affairs in Spain and Portugal, and not less in Italy, offer cause for continual complaint. The outward power and outside influence of these states is visibly declining. And, what is more discouraging still, infidelity and a revolutionary spirit have made such inroads in these countries, that half of the population, though still nominally Romish, has in reality broken with all true religion. This may be seen in France, which is almost entirely Romish, and yet has voted time and again with overwhelming majorities against the advocates of religion. In fact we may say; that, in order to appreciate the noble, energetic traits of the Romanists, one must observe them, not in their own countries where they are on the decline, but in the center of Protestant North-Germany, in Protestant Holland and England and in your own Protestant States. In regions where, deprived of a controlling influence, they adjust



themselves to the polity of others and concentrate their strength as an opposition party, under such leaders as Manning and Wiseman, Von Ketteler and Windthorst, they compel our admiration by the enthusiastic championship of their cause.

But even apart from this *testimonium paupertatis* furnished by Rome herself through the mismanagement in Southern Europe and South-America, where she has full sway, in the contest of the nations also her power and influence are visibly waning. The balance of power in Europe is now gradually passing into the hands of Russia, Germany and England, every one of them non-Romish States, and on your own continent the Protestant North holds the supremacy. Since 1866 Austria has been continually retrogressing and at the death of the present Emperor will be seriously threatened with dissolution. Italy has attempted to live beyond its resources: it strove to be a great, colonial, naval power, and the result is that it has brought itself to the verge of economic ruin. The battle of Addua dealt the death-blow to more than her colonial aspirations. Spain and Portugal have absolutely lost all influence on the Social, intellectual, and political development of Europe. And France, which only fifty years ago made all Europe tremble at the unsheathing of her sword, is now herself anxiously scanning the Sibylline books of her future. Even from a statistical point of view, the power of Rome is all the while decreasing. Economic depression has in more than one Romish country brought about a considerable decrease of the birthrate. Whilst in Russia, Germany, England and the United States population is growing, it has in some Romish countries become almost stationary. Even now statistics give only the smaller half of Christendom to the Roman-Catholic Church, and it is safe to predict that within the next half century its share will be less than forty per cent. However highly, therefore, I may be inclined to value the inherent power of Roman-Catholic





unity and scholarship for the defense of much, we also count sacred, and though I do not see how we could repulse the attack of modernism save by combined exertion, nevertheless there is not the slightest prospect that the political supremacy will ever again pass into Rome's hands. And, even if this were to happen contrary to expectations, who could possibly rejoice as in the realization of his ideal, of he beheld the conditions now prevailing in Southern Europe and South America reproduced elsewhere.

We may, in fact, even put it more strongly: it would be a step backwards in the course of history. Rome's world and life-view represents an older and hence lower stage of development in the history of mankind. Protestantism succeeded it, and hence occupies a spiritually higher standpoint. He who will not go backwards, but reaches after higher things, must therefore either stand by the world-view once developed by Protestantism, or, on the other hand, for this too is conceivable, point out a still higher standpoint. Now this it is that the latter modern philosophy does indeed presume to do, acknowledging Luther as a great man for his time, but hailing in Kant and Darwin the apostles of a much richer gospel. But this need not detain us. For our own age, however great in invention, in the display of powers of mind and energy, has not advanced us a single step in the establishment of principles, has in no wise given us a higher view of life, and has yielded us neither greater stability nor greater soundness in our religious and ethical i.e. truly human existence. The solid faith of the Reformation it has bartered for shifting hypotheses; and in so far as it ventured upon a systematised and strictly logical life-view it did not reach forward, but backward, to that Heathen wisdom of pre-Christian times, of which Paul testified that God has put it to shame by the foolishness of the Cross. Let no one therefore say: Ye, who, because history does not go backward, protest against a return to Rome, ye yourselves have no right to make a stand on Protestantism;



for after Protestantism came Modernism. For the pertinence of such an objection must be denied, as long as my contention be not disproved, that the material advance of our century has nothing in common with advancement in the matter of life principles, and that what modernism offers us is not modern but, rather, very antique, not posterior, but anterior to Protestantism, reaching back to the Stoa and to Epicurns.

Only along the lines of Protestantism therefore, can a successful advance be attempted, and on those lines indeed salvation is sought at present, by two different tendencies both of which must lead to bitter disappointment. The one of these is *practical*, the other *mystical* in character. Without hope of defense against modern criticism and still less against criticism of dogma, the former, the practical tendency, holds that Christians can do no better than fall back upon all manner of Christian works. Its devotees are at a loss what attitude to assume towards the Scriptures; they have become themselves estranged from dogma; but what is to prevent such hesitating believers from sacrificing their person and their gold to the cause of philanthropy, evangelism and missions! This even offers a threefold advantage: it unites Christians of all shades of opinion, alleviates much misery, and has a conciliatory attraction for the non-Christian world. And of course this propagandism through action must be gratefully and sympathetically hailed. In the century that has passed, Christian activity was indeed far too limited and a Christianity that does not prove its worth in practice, degenerates into dry scholasticism and idle talk. It would be a mistake, however, to suppose that Christianity can be confined within the limits of such practical manifestation. Our Savior made whole the sick and fed the hungry, but the paramount thing in His ministry was, after all, that in strict allegiance to the Scriptures of the old covenant, He openly proclaimed his own divinity and mediatorship, the expiation of sins



through his blood, and his coming to judgment. No dogma, in fact, has ever been confessed by the church of Christ which was not the intellectual definition of what Christ proclaimed about His own mission to the world, and about the world to which he was sent. He healed the sick body, but, He even more truly bound up our spiritual wounds. He rescued us from Paganism and Judaism and translated us into a wholly new world of convictions of which He Himself as the God-ordained Messiah constituted the center. Besides, so far as our dispute with Rome is concerned, we should not lose sight of the fact that in Christian works and devotion Rome still outstrips us: nay let us acknowledge without reserve that even the unbelieving world is beginning to rival us and that in deeds of philanthropy, she tries more and more to overtake us. In missions, to be sure, unbelief does not follow in our footsteps, but pray how can we continue to prosecute missions, unless we have a well-defined gospel to preach? Or is it possible to imagine anything more monstrous than so-called liberal missionaries preaching only humanity and colorless piety and met by the pagan sages with the answer that they themselves in their cultured circles have never taught or believed anything else than just this modern humanism.

Does perhaps the other tendency, the mystical one, possess stronger powers of defense? What thinker or student of history would affirm this? No doubt mysticism radiates a fervor that warms the heart and woe betide the giant of dogma and the hero of action, who are strangers to its depth and tenderness. God created hand, head and heart, the hand for the deed, the head for the word, the heart for mysticism. King in deed, prophet in profession, and priest in heart, shall man in his threefold office stand before God, and a Christianity that neglects the mystic element grows frigid and congeals. We are therefore to be accounted fortunate whenever a mystic atmosphere envelopes us, making us breathe the balmy air of spring



Through it life is made truer, deeper, and richer. But it would be a sad mistake to suppose that mysticism, taken by itself, can bring about a reversal in the spirit of the age. Not Bernard of Clairvaux but Thomas of Aquino, not Thomas à Kempis but Luther have ruled the spirits of men. Mysticism is, in its very nature, seclusive, and strives rather to avoid contact with the outside world. Its very strength lies in the indifferentiated life of the soul and on this account it cannot take a positive stand. It flows along a subterranean bed and does not show sharply demarcated lines above ground. What is worse, history proves that all one-sided mysticism has always become morbid and has ultimately degenerated into a mysticism of the flesh astounding the world with its infamy.

Accordingly, although I rejoice in the revival of both the practical and mystical tendencies, both will result in loss instead of gain if they are expected to compensate for the abandonment of the Bible and the confession. Mysticism is sweet and Christian works are precious, but the seed of the church, both at the birth of Christianity and in the age of the Reformation has been the blood of martyrs, and our sainted martyrs shed their blood not for mysticism and not for philanthropic projects but for the sake of convictions such as concerned the acceptance of the truth and the rejection of error. To live with consciousness is our well-nigh divine prerogative, and only from the clear unobscured vision of consciousness proceeds the mighty word that can make the times reverse their current, and cause a revolution in the spirit of the world. It is self-deception, therefore, and only self-deception, when these practical and mystical Christians believe they can do without a Christian life and world-view of their own. No one can do without that. Every one who thinks he can abandon the Christian dogma and do away with the Catechism of the Reformation, lends ear unawares to the hypotheses of the modern world-view and without knowing





how far he has drifted, swears by the Catechism of the *Zeitgeist*.

Therefore let us not stop half-way. As truly as every plant has a root, so truly does a principle hide under every manifestation of life. These principles are interconnected and have their common root in a fundamental principle, and from the latter is developed logically and systematically the whole complex of ruling ideas and conceptions that go to make up our life and world-view. With such a coherent world and life-view, firmly resting on its principle and self-consistent in its splendid structure, modernism now confronts Christianity and against this deadly danger, ye, Christians, cannot successfully defend your Sanctuary, but by placing, in opposition to all this, a life and world-view of your own, founded as firmly on the base of your own principle, wrought out with the same clearness and glittering in an equally logical consistency. Now this is not obtained by either Christian works or mysticism, but only by going back, our hearts full of mystical warmth and our personal faith manifesting itself in abundant fruit, to that turning-point in history and in the development of humanity which was reached in the Reformation. And this is equivalent to a return to Calvinism. There is no choice here. Socinianism died an inglorious death; Anabaptism perished in wild revolutionary orgies; Luther never worked out his fundamental thought; and Protestantism taken in a general sense, without further differentiation, is either a purely negative conception without content, or a chameleon-like name which the deniers of the God-man like to adopt as their shield. Only of Calvinism can it be said that it has consistently and logically followed out the lines of the Reformation, has established churches and States, has set its stamp upon social and public life, and has thus, in the full sense of the word, created for the whole life of man a world of thought entirely its own. It follows therefore that we are placed before a trilemma



compelling us either to let ourselves be carried along by modernism, which means the doom of Christianity; or to construct a world-view of our own such as shall transcend Calvinism, a task thus far attempted by no one; or finally to bring to light again the half forgotten fundamental lines of Calvinism and extend these in accordance with the demands of our present so much more richly developed life.

I feel convinced that, after what I have said in my Lectures, no one will accuse me of underrating Lutheranism; yet the present emperor of Germany has no less than three times furnished an example of the evil after-effect of Luther's apparently slight mistakes. Luther was misled into recognizing the sovereign of the land as the head of the established church and what have we as a result of this been called upon to witness from Germany's eccentric emperor? First of all that Stöcker, the champion of Christian democracy, was dismissed from his court, merely because this bold defender of the freedom of the churches had so much as expressed the wish that the emperor should abdicate his chief episcopate. Next that, at the sailing of the German squadron for China, Prince Henry of Russia was instructed to carry to the far Orient not the "Christian" but the "*imperial* gospel". And more recently that he called upon his loyal subjects to be faithful in the performance of their duties, urging as a motive that after death they were to appear before God . . . and His Christ? . . . No: but . . . before God . . . *and the great emperor*. Ever bolder encroachment, it will be noticed, of Caesarism upon the essence of the Christian religion. These as you see, are far from mere trifles, rather they touch principles of world-wide application, for which our forefathers in the age of the Reformation fought their great battles. To reprimand I am as averse as any man, but in order to place for the defense of Christianity, principle over against principle, and world-view over against world-view, there lies at hand, for him



who is a Protestant in bone and marrow, only the Calvinistic principle as the sole trustworthy foundation on which to build.

---

What then are we to understand by this return to Calvinism? Do I mean that all believing Protestants should subscribe the sooner the better to the Reformed symbols and thus all ecclesiastical multiformity be swallowed up in the unity of the Reformed church-organisation? I am far from cherishing so crude, so ignorant, so unhistorical a desire. As a matter of course, there is inherent in every conviction, in every confession, a motive for absolute and unconditional propagandism, and the word of Paul to Agrippa: "I would to God that with little or with much, not you only, but also all that hear me this day, might become such as I am" must remain the heart-felt wish not only of every good Calvinist, but of every one who may glory in a firm immovable conviction. But so ideal a desire of the human heart can never be realized, in this our dispensation. First of all, not one Reformed Standard, not even the purest, is infallible as was the word of Paul. Then again the Calvinistic confession is so deeply religious, so highly spiritual, that, excepting always periods of profound religious commotion, it will never be realized by the large masses but will impress with a sense of its inevitability only a relatively small circle. Furthermore our inborn onesidedness will always necessarily lead to the manifestation of the church of Christ in many forms. And, last not least, absorption on a large scale by one church of the members of another can only take place at critical moments in history. In the ordinary run of things ninety per cent of the Christian population die in the church in which they were born and baptized. Besides, such an identification of my program with the absorption of one church by another would be at variance with the whole tendency of my argument.



Not ecclesiastically, confined to a narrow circle, but as a phenomenon of universal significance have I commended to you the Calvinism of history. Therefore what I ask may in the main be reduced to the following four points: 1. that Calvinism shall no longer be ignored where it still exists, but rather be retraced where the after effects of its influence are still manifest; 2. that Calvinism shall again be made a subject of study in order that the outside world may cease to misrepresent it; 3. that its principles shall again be consistently applied not only to Theology, but to every department of life; 4. that the churches which still lay claim to confessing it, shall cease being ashamed of their confession.

First then, Calvinism should no longer be ignored where it still exists but rather be retraced where traces of its historical influence are still manifest. A pointing out, in detail, with even some degree of completeness, of the traces that Calvinism has everywhere left behind in social and political, in scientific and esthetic life, would in itself demand a broader study than could be thought of in the rapid course of a single lecture. Allow me therefore, addressing an American audience, to point out a single feature in your own political life. I have already observed in my third lecture how in the preamble of more than one of your constitutions, while taking a decidedly democratic view, nevertheless not the atheistic standpoint of the French revolution, but the Calvinistic confession of the supreme sovereignty of God, has been made the foundation, at times even in terms, as I have pointed out, corresponding literally with the words of Calvin. Not a trace is to be found among you of that anti-clericalism which has become identified with the very essence of the revolutionary democracy, in France and elsewhere, and when your President proclaims a national day of thanksgiving or when the houses of Congress assembled in Washington are opened with prayer, it is ever new evidence





that through American democracy there runs even yet a vein, which, having sprung from the Pilgrim Fathers, still exerts its power at the present day. Even your common-school system, blessed with reading of scripture and opening prayer, points, though with decreasing distinctness, to like Calvinistic origin. Similarly in the rise of your university education, springing for the larger part from individual initiative; in the decentralized and autonomous character of your local governments; in your strict and yet not nomistic Sabbath-observance; in the esteem in which woman is held among you, without falling into the Parisian deification of her sex; in your sense for domesticity; in the closeness of your family ties; in your championship of free speech and in your unlimited regard for freedom of conscience; in all this your Christian democracy is in direct opposition to the democracy of the French revolution; and historically also it is demonstrable that you owe this to Calvinism. But lo and behold, while you are thus enjoying the fruits of Calvinism, and while even outside of your borders the constitutional system of government upholds the national honor, it is whispered abroad that all these are to be accounted blessings of Humanism, and scarcely any one still thinks of honoring in them the after effect of Calvinism, the latter being believed to lead a lingering life only in a few dogmatically petrified circles. What I demand then, and demand with an historic right, is that this ungrateful ignoring of Calvinism shall come to an end; that the influence it has exerted shall again receive attention where it still remains stamped upon the actual life of to-day; and that, where men of a wholly different spirit would unobservedly divert the current of life into French-revolutionary or German-pantheistic channels, you on this side of the water, and we on our side, should oppose with might and main such falsification of the historic principles of our life.

That we may be enabled to do so, I contend in the



second place for an historical study of the principles of Calvinism. No love without knowledge, and Calvinism has lost its place in the hearts of the people. It is being advocated only from a theological point of view, and even then very one-sidedly and merely as a side-issue. The cause of this I have pointed out in a previous lecture. Since Calvinism arose, not from an abstract system, but from life itself, it never was in the century of its prime presented as a systematic whole. The tree blossomed and yielded its fruit but without any one having made a botanic study of its nature and growth. Calvinism, in its rise, rather acted than argued. But now this study may no longer be delayed. Both the biography and biology of Calvinism must now be thoroughly investigated and thought out, or, with our lack of self-knowledge, we shall, *nolens volens*, be side-tracked into a world of ideas that is more at discord than in consonance with the life of our Christian democracy, and cut loose from the root on which we once blossomed so vigorously.

Only through such study will become possible what I named in the third place: the application of the principles of Calvinism to every department of life by choosing its special principle as the point of departure for all branches of science. I do not exclude theology from this, for theology too exercises its influence upon life in all its ramifications, and it is, therefore, sad to see how even the theology of the Reformed Churches has in so many a country come under the sway of wholly foreign systems. But, at all events, theology is only one of the many sciences that demand Calvinistic treatment. Jurisprudence, the social sciences, philosophy, literature, psychology, aesthetics, and even the medical and natural sciences, each and all of these, when philosophically conceived, go back to principles, and of need in our circles the question must be put with much more penetrating seriousness than hitherto, whether the ontological and anthropological principles that reign



supreme in the present method of these sciences are in agreement with the principles of Calvinism or are at variance with their very essence.

Finally I would add to these three demands, historically justified as it seems to me, still a fourth, that those churches which yet lay claim to professing the Reformed faith, shall cease being ashamed of this confession. You have heard how broad my conception and how wide my views are, even in the matter of ecclesiastical life. In free development only do I see the salvation of this Church-life. I exalt multiformity and hail in it a higher stage of development. Even for the church that has the purest confession, I would not dispense with the aid of other churches in order that its inevitable one-sidedness may thus be complemented. But what has always filled me with wrath and indignation was to behold a church or to meet the office-bearer of a church, with the flag furled or hidden under the garb of office, instead of being thrown out boldly to display its glorious colours in the breeze. What one confesses to be the truth, one must also dare to practise in word, deed and whole manner of life. A church Calvinistic in origin and still recognizable by its Calvinistic confession, which lacks the courage, nay rather which no longer feels the impulse to defend that confession boldly and bravely against all the world, such a church dishonors not Calvinism but itself. Albeit the churches Reformed in bone and marrow may be small and few in numbers, as churches they will always prove indispensable for Calvinism, and here also the smallness of the seed need not disturb us, if only that seed be sound and whole, instinct with generative and irrepressible life.

---

And thus my last lecture is rapidly drawing to its end. But before I close, I feel nevertheless that one question continues to press for an answer, which accordingly I shall not refuse to face, the question namely, at what I am



aiming in the end: at the abandonment or at the maintenance of the doctrine of election. Thereunto allow me to contrast with this word *election* another word that differs from it in but a single letter. Our generation turns a deaf ear to *Election*, but grows madly enthusiastic over *Selection*. How may we formulate the tremendous problem that lies hidden behind these two words, and in what particular do the solutions of this problem, as represented by these two, almost identical formula's, differ? The problem concerns the fundamental question: Whence are the differences? Why is not all alike? Whence is it that one thing exists in one state another in another? There is no life without differentiation, and no differentiation without inequality. The perception of difference is the very source of human consciousness, the causative principle of all that exists and grows and develops, in short the mainspring of all life and thought. I am therefore justified in asserting that in the end every other problem may be reduced to this one problem: Whence are those differences? Whence is the dissimilarity, the heterogeneity of existence, of genesis, of consciousness? To put it concretely, if a plant you would rather be rose than mushroom; if insect, butterfly rather than spider; if bird, eagle rather than owl; if a higher vertebrate, lion rather than hyena; and again, being man, rich rather than poor, talented rather than dull-minded, of the Aryan race rather than Hottentot or Kaffer. Between all these there is differentiation, wide differentiation. And I may add that many a one of our race, in his presumptuous audacity, has aimed still higher,—has desired to be *God*.—and behold he was and remained *man*. Everywhere then differences, differences between the one being and the other, and that too such differences as involve in almost every instance, preference. When the hawk rends and tears the dove, whence is it that these two creatures are thus opposed to, and different from each other? This is the one supreme question in the vegetable and animal





kingdom, among men, in all social life, and it is by means of the theory of *Selection*, that our present age attempts to solve this problem of problems. Even in the single cell it posits differences, weaker and stronger elements. The stronger overcomes the weaker and the gain is stored up in a higher potency of being, or, should the weaker still maintain its subsistence, the difference will be manifest in the further course of the struggle itself.

Now the blade of grass is not conscious of this, and the spider goes on entrapping the fly, the tiger killing the stag, and in those cases the weaker being does not account to itself for its misery. But we men are clearly conscious of these differences and by us therefore the question cannot be evaded, whether the theory of Selection be a solution calculated to conciliate the weaker, the less richly endowed creature with its existence. It will be acknowledged that in itself this theory can but incite to a more furious struggle, with a *lasciate andare ogni speranza* for the weaker being. Against the ordinance of fate that the weaker shall succumb to the stronger, no struggle can avail. The reconciliation, not springing from the facts, would therefore have to spring from the *idea*. But what is here the idea? Is it not this, that, where these differences have once become established, and highly differentiated beings appear, this is either the result of chance, or else the necessary consequence of blind natural forces? Now, are we to believe that suffering humanity will ever become reconciled to its suffering by *such* a solution? Nevertheless I welcome the progress of this theory of Selection and I admire the penetration and power of thought of the men who commend it to us. Not, forsooth, on account of what it urges upon us as a truth, but because it has mustered courage to attack once more the most fundamental of all problems, and thus in point of profundity stands on a level with Calvinism.

For this is precisely the high significance of the doctrine of Election that, in this dogma, as long as three centuries



ago, Calvinism dared to face this same all-dominating problem, solving it, however, not in the sense of a blind selection stirring in unconscious cells, but honouring the sovereign choice of Him Who created all things visible and invisible. The determination of the existence of all things to be created, of what is to be camellia or buttercup, nightingale or crow, hart or swine, and, equally among men, the determination of our own persons, whether one is to be born as girl or boy, rich or poor, dull or clever, or even as Abel or Cain, is the most tremendous predestination conceivable in heaven or on earth, and still we see it taking place before our eyes every day, and we ourselves are subject to it in our entire personality, and our entire existence, our very nature, our position in life being entirely dependent on it. This all-embracing predestination, the Calvinist places, not in the hand of man, and still less in the hand of a blind natural force, but in the hand of Almighty God, Sovereign Creator and Possessor of heaven and earth; and it is in the figure of the potter and the clay that Scripture has from the time of the Prophets expounded to us this all-dominating election. Election in creation, election in providence, and so election also to eternal life; election in the realm of grace as well as in the realm of nature. Now, when we compare these two systems of Selection and Election, does not history show that the doctrine of Election has century upon century, restored peace and reconciliation to the hearts of the believing sufferer, and that all Christians hold election as we do, in honor, both in creation and in providence, and that Calvinism deviates from the other Christian confessions in this respect only, that, grasping unity and placing the glory of God above all things, it dares to extend the mystery of election to spiritual life, and to the hope for the life to come.

This then is what Calvinistic dogmatic narrowness amounts to. Or rather, for the times are too serious for irony or jest, let every Christian, who cannot yet abandon his



objections, at least put this all-important question to himself: Do and know of another solution of this fundamental world-problem enabling me better to defend my Christian faith, in this hour of sharpest conflict, against renewed Paganism collecting its forces and gaining day by day. Do not forget that the fundamental contrast has always been, is still, and will be until the end: Christianity and paganism, the idols or the living God. So far there is a deeply felt truth in the drastic picture drawn by the German emperor, representing Buddhism as the coming enemy. A closely drawn curtain hides the future, but Christ has prophesied to us on Patmos the approach of a last and bloody conflict, and even now Japan's gigantic development in less than forty years has filled Europe with fear for what calamity might be in store for us from the cunning "yellow race" forming so large a proportion of the human family. And did not Gordon testify that his Chinese soldiers, with whom he defeated the Taipings, if only well drilled and officered, made the most splendid soldiers he ever commanded? The Asiatic question is in fact of most serious import. The problem of the world took its rise in Asia and in Asia it will find its final solution; and, both in technical and material development, the issue has shown that heathen nations, as soon as they awake, and arise from their lethargy, rival us almost instantly.

Of course this danger would be far less menacing in case Christendom, in both the old and the new world, stood united around the Cross, shouting songs of praise to their King and Savior, and ready as in the days of the crusades to advance to the final conflict. But how when pagan thought, pagan aspirations, pagan ideals are gaining ground even among us and penetrating the very vitals of the rising generation? Have not the Armenians, just because the conception of Christian solidarity has become so sadly weakened, been basely and cowardly abandoned to the fate of assassination? Has not the Greek been crushed by



the Turk, while Gladstone, the Christian statesman, politically a Calvinist to the very core, who had the courage to brand the Sultan "Great Assassin", has departed from among us? Accordingly radical determination must be insisted upon. Half-measures cannot guarantee the desired result. Superficiality will not brace us for the conflict. Principle must again bear witness against principle, world-view against world-view spirit against spirit. And here, let him who knows better speak, but I for one know of no stronger and no firmer bulwark than Calvinism, provided it be taken in its sound and vigorous formation.

And if you retort, half mockingly, am I really naive enough to expect from certain Calvinistic studies a reversal in the Christian world-view, then be the following my answer: the quickening of life comes not from men, it is the prerogative of God, and it is due to His sovereign will alone, if the tide of religious life rise high in one century, and run to a low ebb in the next. In the moral world, too, we have at one time, spring, when all is budding and rustling with life, and again, the cold of winter, when every vital stream congeals, and all religious energy is petrified.

Now the period in which we are living at present, is surely at a low ebb religiously, and lacks the heroic spark. Unless God send forth his spirit, there will be no turn, and fearfully rapid will be the descent of the waters. But you remember the Aeolian Harp, which men were wont to place outside their casement, that the breeze might wake its music into life. Until the wind blew, the harp remained silent, while, on the other hand, even though the wind arose, if the harp did not lie in readiness, a rustling of the breeze might be heard, but not a single note of ethereal music delighted the ear. Now, let Calvinism be nothing but such an Aeolian Harp,—absolutely powerless, as it is, without the quickening spirit of God, still we feel it our God-given duty to keep our harp, its strings tuned aright, ready in the window of God's Holy Zion, awaiting the breath of the Spirit.







For use in Library only







